



P.O. angl.

Fielding

125-10

P.O. angl.

125-10

<36608434310014

<36608434310014

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek

H. E. ang. - 35

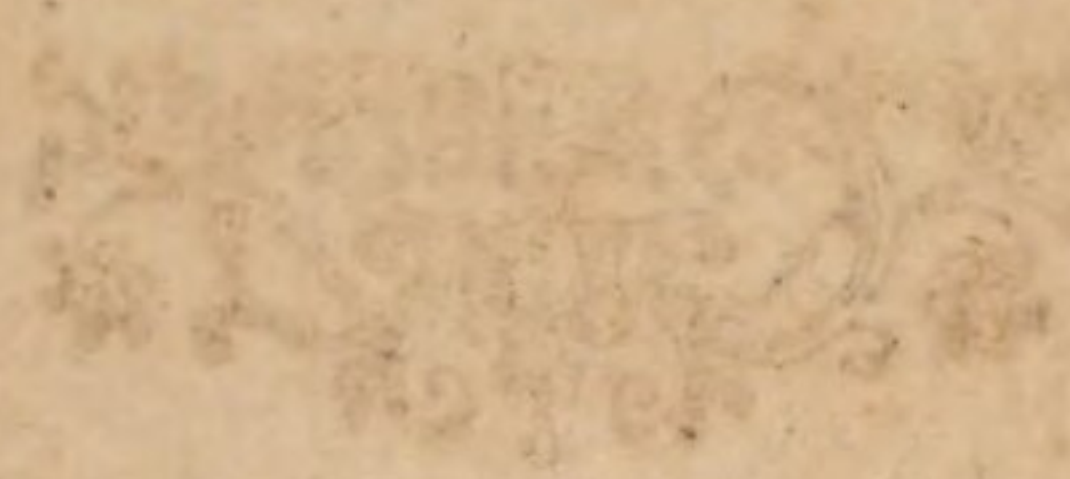
Om. 11463.

HENRY TRODING, ED.

THE LIFE OF GEORGE BUSHNELL

VOL. I.

THE THIRD EDITION



U. M. I.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

ANN ARBOR

THE
WORKS
OF
HENRY FIELDING, Esq;

WITH
The LIFE of the AUTHOR.

VOL. X.

THE THIRD EDITION.



L O N D O N:

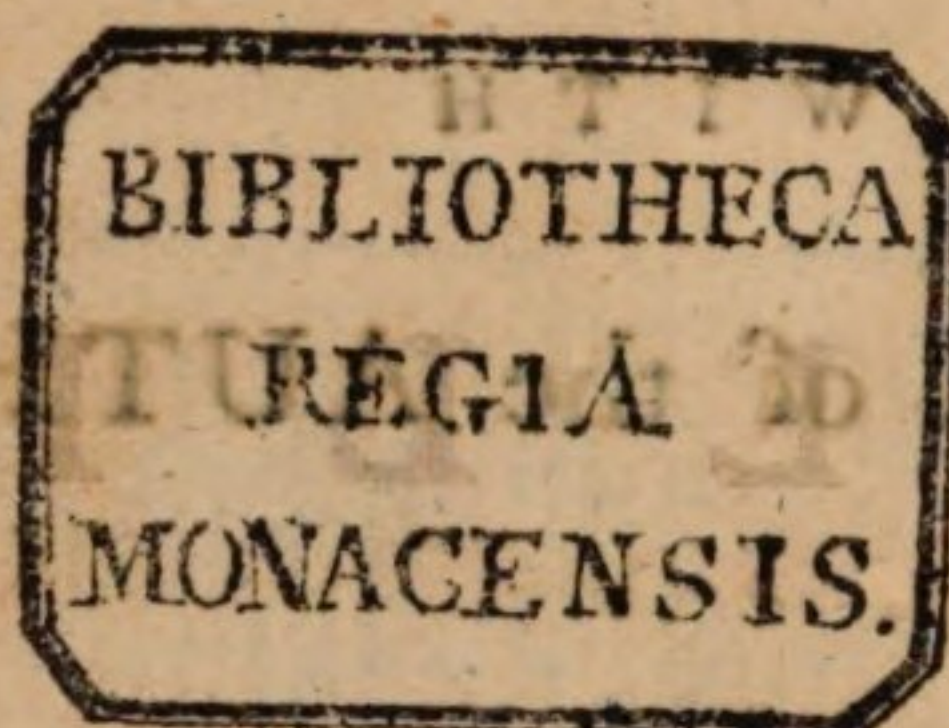
Printed for A. MILLAR, in the Strand.
M.DCC.LXVI.

THE

WORKS

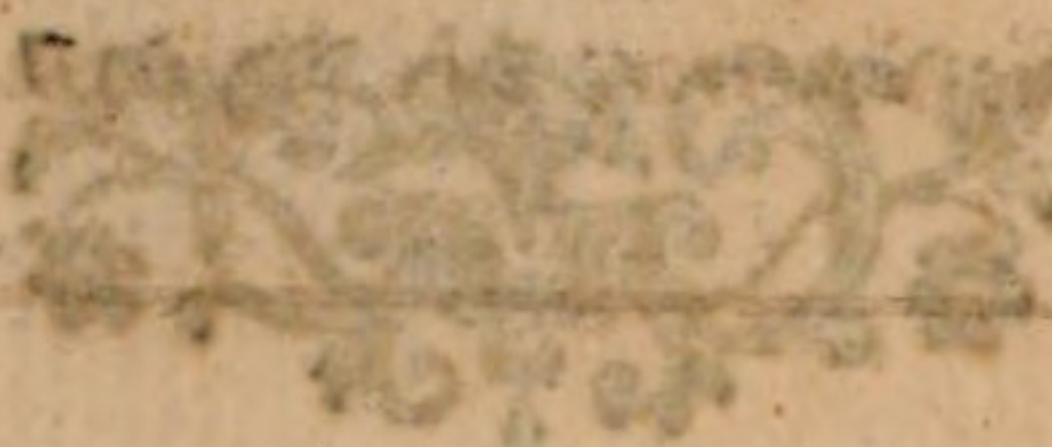
OF

HENRY FIELDING, Esq;



VOL. X.

THE THIRD EDITION.



LONDON:

Printed for A. MILLAR, in the Strand.

MDCCLXXI.

A M E L I A.

*Felices ter & amplius,
Quos irrupta tenet copula.*

Γυναικὸς ἐδὲν χρῆμ' ἀνὴρ ληίζεται
Ἐσθλῆς ἀμεινον, ἐδὲ ρίγιον κακῆς.

RALPH ALLEN, Esq.

THE following is a list of the
names of the persons who have
been appointed to the office of
the Secretary of the Board of
Education, and the names of the
persons who have been appointed
to the office of the Secretary of
the Board of Health.

The names of the persons who
have been appointed to the office
of the Secretary of the Board of
Education, and the names of the
persons who have been appointed
to the office of the Secretary of
the Board of Health, are as
follows:—

It will be seen that the names
of the persons who have been
appointed to the office of the
Secretary of the Board of
Education, and the names of the
persons who have been appointed
to the office of the Secretary of
the Board of Health, are as
follows:—

T O

R A L P H A L L E N, Esq;

S I R,

TH E following book is sincerely designed to promote the cause of virtue, and to expose some of the most glaring evils, as well public as private, which at present infest the country ; though there is scarce, as I remember, a single stroke of satire aimed at any one person throughout the whole.

The best man is the properest patron of such an attempt. This, I believe, will be readily granted ; nor will the public voice, I think, be more divided, to whom they will give that appellation. Should a letter indeed be thus inscribed, *DE TUR OPTIMO*, there are few persons who would think it wanted any other direction.

I will not trouble you with a preface concerning the work ; nor endeavour to

obviate any criticisms which can be made on it. The good-natured reader, if his heart should be here affected, will be inclined to pardon many faults for the pleasure he will receive from a tender sensation; and for readers of a different stamp, the more faults they can discover, the more, I am convinced, they will be pleased.

Nor will I assume the fulsome stile of common dedicators. I have not their usual design in this epistle; nor will I borrow their language. Long, very long may it be before a most dreadful circumstance shall make it possible for any pen to draw a just and true character of yourself, without incurring a suspicion of flattery in the bosoms of the malignant. This task, therefore, I shall defer till that day (if I should be so unfortunate as ever to see it) when every good man shall pay a tear for the satisfaction of his curiosity; a day which at present, I believe, there is but one good man in the

DEDICATION.

vii

the world who can think of it with unconcern.

Accept then, Sir, this small token of that love, that gratitude, and that respect with which I shall always esteem it my **GREATEST HONOUR** to be,

S I R,

Your most obliged,

And most obedient

Humble Servant,

*Bow-Street,
Dec. 2, 1751.*

Henry Fielding.

CON-

CONTEST
the world who can think of it with out
concern.

Accept then, Sir, the humblest of
that love, that gratitude, and that respect
with which I shall always esteem it my
GREATEST HONOUR to be

Yours most obliged
And most obedient
servant

Henry Fielding

Dr. A. A. A.

Dr. A. A. A.

C O N T E N T S

O F T H E T E N T H V O L U M E.

B O O K I.

Containing the history of Amelia.

- CHAP. I. *T H E* exordium, &c. Page 1
- CHAP. II. *The history sets out. Observations on the excellency of the English constitution, and curious examinations before a justice of peace.* p. 2
- CHAP. III. *Containing the inside of a prison.* p. 9
- CHAP. IV. *Disclosing further secrets of the prison-house.* p. 14
- CHAP. V. *Containing certain adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the prison.* p. 19
- CHAP. VI. *Containing the extraordinary behaviour of Miss Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and some endeavours to prove by reason and authority, that it is possible for a woman to appear to be what she really is not.* p. 23
- CHAP. VII. *In which Miss Matthews begins her history.* p. 28
- CHAP. VIII. *The history of Miss Matthews continued.* p. 33
- CHAP. IX. *In which Miss Matthews concludes her relation.* p. 38
- CHAP. X. *Table talk, consisting of a facetious discourse that passed in the prison.* p. 46

B O O K II.

- CHAP. I. *In which Captain Booth begins to relate his history.* p. 52
- CHAP. II. *Mr. Booth continues his story. In this chapter there are some passages that may serve as a kind of touchstone, by which a young lady may examine the heart of her lover. I would advise, therefore, that every lover*

lover be obliged to read it over in the presence of his mistress, and that she carefully watch his emotions while he is reading.

Page 56

CHAP. III. *The narrative continued. More of the touch-stone.*

p. 61

CHAP. IV. *The story of Mr. Booth continued: In this chapter the reader will perceive a glimpse of the character of a very good divine; with some matters of a very tender kind.*

p. 65

CHAP. V. *Containing strange revolutions of fortune.*

p. 69

CHAP. VI. *Containing many surprising adventures.*

p. 72

CHAP. VII. *The story of Booth continued. More surprising adventures.*

p. 78

CHAP. VIII. *In which our readers will probably be divided in their opinion of Mr. Booth's conduct.*

p. 83

CHAP. IX. *Containing a scene of a different kind from any of the preceding.*

p. 87

BOOK III.

CHAP. I. *In which Mr. Booth resumes his story.*

p. 94

CHAP. II. *Containing a scene of the tender kind.*

p. 96

CHAP. III. *In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his journey.*

p. 102

CHAP. IV. *A sea-piece.*

p. 105

CHAP. V. *The arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him.*

p. 111

CHAP. VI. *Containing matters which will please some readers.*

p. 114

CHAP. VII. *The captain continuing his story, recounts some particulars, which we doubt not, to many good people, will appear unnatural.*

p. 118

CHAP. VIII. *The story of Booth continued.*

p. 124

CHAP. IX. *Containing very extraordinary matters.*

p. 132

CHAP. X. *Containing a letter of a very curious kind.*

p. 137

CHAP. XI. *In which Mr. Booth relates his return to England.*

p. 142

CHAP. XII. *In which Mr. Booth concludes his story.*

p. 147

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I. *Containing very mysterious matter.*

p. 154

CHAP. II. *The latter part of which we expect will please our reader better than the former.*

p. 157

CHAP.

- CHAP. III. *Containing wise observations of the author, and other matters.* Page 165
- CHAP. IV. *In which Amelia appears in no unamiable light.* p. 172
- CHAP. V. *Containing an eulogium upon innocence, and other grave matters.* p. 175
- CHAP. VI. *In which may appear that violence is sometimes done to the name of love.* p. 182
- CHAP. VII. *Containing a very extraordinary and pleasant incident.* p. 188
- CHAP. VIII. *Containing various matters.* p. 192
- CHAP. IX. *In which Amelia, with her friend, goes to the oratorio.* p. 196

BOOK V.

- CHAP. I. *In which the reader will meet with an old acquaintance.* p. 203
- CHAP. II. *In which Booth pays a visit to the noble lord.* p. 206
- CHAP. III. *Relating principally to the affairs of Serjeant Atkinson.* p. 210
- CHAP. IV. *Containing matters that require no preface.* p. 215
- CHAP. V. *Containing much heroic matter.* p. 220
- CHAP. VI. *In which the reader will find matter worthy his consideration.* p. 224
- CHAP. VII. *Containing various matters.* p. 230
- CHAP. VIII. *The heroic behaviour of Colonel Bath.* p. 236
- CHAP. IX. *Being the last chapter of the fifth book.* p. 241

BOOK VI.

- CHAP. I. *Panegyric on beauty, with other grave matters.* p. 246
- CHAP. II. *Which will not appear, we presume, unnatural to all married readers.* p. 251
- CHAP. III. *In which the history looks a little backwards.* p. 255
- CHAP. IV. *Containing a very extraordinary incident.* p. 261
- CHAP. V. *Containing some matters not very unnatural.* p. 266
- CHAP.

CHAP. VI. *A scene, in which some ladies will possibly think Amelia's conduct exceptionable.* Page 270

CHAP. VII. *A chapter in which there is much learning.* p. 275

CHAP. VIII. *Containing some unaccountable behaviour in Mrs. Ellifon.* p. 280

CHAP. IX. *Containing a very strange incident.* p. 285

BOOK VII.

CHAP. I. *A very short chapter, and consequently requiring no preface.* p. 289

CHAP. II. *The beginning of Mrs. Bennet's history.* p. 291

CHAP. III. *Continuation of Mrs. Bennet's story.* p. 299

CHAP. IV. *Further Continuation.* p. 305

CHAP. V. *The story of Mrs. Bennet continued.* p. 310

CHAP. VI. *Further continuation.* p. 318

CHAP. VII. *The story further continued.* p. 325

CHAP. VIII. *Further continuation.* p. 328

CHAP. IX. *The conclusion of Mrs. Bennet's history.* p. 333

CHAP. X. *Being the last chapter of the seventh book.* p. 337

AMELIA.

A M E L I A.

B O O K I.

C H A P. I.

Containing the Exordium, &c.

THE various accidents which beset a very worthy couple, after their uniting in the state of matrimony, will be the subject of the following history. The distresses which they waded through, were some of them so exquisite, and the incidents which produced these so extraordinary, that they seemed to require not only the utmost malice, but the utmost invention which superstition hath ever attributed to Fortune: though whether any such being interfered in the case, or, indeed, whether there be any such being in the universe, is a matter which I by no means presume to determine in the affirmative. To speak a bold truth, I am, after much mature deliberation, inclined to suspect, that the public voice hath, in all ages, done much injustice to Fortune, and hath convicted her of many facts in which she had not the least concern. I question much, whether we may not, by natural means, account for the success of knaves, the calamities of fools, with all the miseries in which men of sense sometimes involve themselves by quitting the directions of prudence, and following the blind guidance of a predominant passion; in short, for all the ordinary Phenomena which are imputed to Fortune; whom, perhaps, men accuse with no less absurdity in life, than a bad player complains of ill luck at the game of chess.

But if men are sometimes guilty of laying improper blame on this imaginary being, they are altogether as apt to make her amends, by ascribing to her honours which she as little deserves. To retrieve the ill consequences of a foolish conduct, and by struggling manfully with distress to subdue it, is one of the noblest efforts of wisdom and virtue. Whoever, therefore, calls such a man fortunate, is guilty of no less impropriety in speech, than he would be, who should call the statuary or the poet fortunate, who carved a Venus, or who writ an Iliad.

Life may as properly be called an art as any other; and the great incidents in it are no more to be considered as mere accidents, than the several members of a fine statue, or a noble poem. The critics in all these are not content with seeing any thing to be great, without knowing why and how it came to be so. By examining carefully the several gradations which conduce to bring every model to perfection, we learn truly to know that science in which the model is formed: as histories of this kind, therefore, may properly be called models of HUMAN LIFE; so by observing minutely the several incidents which tend to the catastrophe or completion of the whole, and the minute causes whence those incidents are produced, we shall best be instructed in this most useful of all arts, which I call the ART of LIFE.

C H A P. II.

The history sets out. Observations on the excellency of the English constitution, and curious examinations before a justice of peace.

ON the first of April, in the year —, the watchmen of a certain parish (I know not particularly which) within the liberty of Westminster, brought several persons whom they had apprehended the preceding night, before Jonathan Thrasher, Esq; one of the justices of the peace for that liberty.

But here, reader, before we proceed to the trials of these offenders, we shall, after our usual manner, premise some things which it may be necessary for thee to know.

It hath been observed, I think, by many, as well as the celebrated writer of three letters, that no human institution is capable of consummate perfection. An observation which, perhaps, that writer at least gathered from discovering some defects in the polity even of this well regulated nation. And, indeed, if there should be any such defect in a constitution which my lord Coke long ago told us, 'the wisdom of all the wise men in the world, if they had all met together at one time, could not have equalled;' which some of our wisest men who were met together long before, said, was too good to be altered in any particular; and which, nevertheless, hath been mending ever since, by a very great number of the said wise men: if, I say, this constitution should be imperfect, we may be allowed, I think, to doubt whether any such faultless model can be found among the institutions of men.

It will probably be objected, that the small imperfections which I am about to produce, do not lie in the laws themselves, but in the ill execution of them; but, with submission, this appears to me to be no less an absurdity, than to say of any machine that it is excellently made, though incapable of performing its functions. Good laws should execute themselves in a well regulated state; at least, if the same legislature which provides the laws, doth not provide for the execution of them, they act as Graham would do, if he should form all the parts of a clock in the most exquisite manner, yet put them so together that the clock could not go. In this case, surely we might say that there was a small defect in the constitution of the clock.

To say the truth, Graham would soon see the fault, and would easily remedy it. The fault indeed could be no other than that the parts were improperly disposed.

Perhaps, reader, I have another illustration, which will set my intention in still a clearer light before you. Figure to yourself then a family, the master of which should dispose of the several oeconomic offices in the following manner; viz. should put his butler in the coach-box, his steward behind his coach, his coachman in the butlery, and his foot-man in the stewardship, and in the same ridiculous manner should mis-employ the talents of every other servant; it is easy to see what a figure such a family must make in the world.

As ridiculous as this may seem, I have often considered some of the lower offices in our civil government to be disposed in this very manner. To begin, I think, as low as I well can, with the watchmen in our metropolis: who being to guard our streets by night from thieves and robbers, an office which at least requires strength of body, are chosen out of those poor old decrepit people, who are, from their want of bodily strength, rendered incapable of getting a livelihood by work. These men armed only with a pole, which some of them are scarce able to lift, are to secure the persons and houses of his majesty's subjects from the attacks of gangs of young, bold, stout, desperate, and well-armed villains.

*Quæ non viribus istis
Munera conveniunt.*

If the poor old fellows should run away from such enemies, no one I think can wonder, unless it be that they were able to make their escape.

The higher we proceed among our public officers and magistrates, the less defects of this kind will, perhaps, be observable. Mr. Thrasher, however, the justice before whom the prisoners above-mentioned were now brought, had some few imperfections in his magistratical capacity. I own, I have been sometimes inclined to think, that this office of a justice of peace requires some knowledge of the law: for this simple reason; because in every case which comes before him, he is to judge and act according to law. Again,

as

as these laws are contained in a great variety of books; the statutes which relate to the office of a justice of peace making of themselves at least two large volumes in folio; and that part of his jurisdiction which is founded on the common law being dispersed in above a hundred volumes, I cannot conceive how this knowledge should be acquired without reading; and yet certain it is, Mr. Thrasher never read one syllable of the matter.

This perhaps was a defect; but this was not all: for where mere ignorance is to decide a point between two litigants, it will always be an even chance whether it decides right or wrong; but sorry am I to say, right was often in a much worse situation than this, and wrong hath often had five hundred to one on his side before that magistrate; who, if he was ignorant of the law of England, was yet well versed in the laws of nature. He perfectly well understood that fundamental principle so strongly laid down in the institutes of the learned Rochefoucault; by which the duty of self-love is so strongly enforced, and every man is taught to consider himself as the centre of gravity, and to attract all things thither. To speak the truth plainly, the justice was never indifferent in a cause, but when he could get nothing on either side.

Such was the justice, to whose tremendous bar Mr. Gotobed the constable, on the day abovementioned, brought several delinquents, who, as we have said, had been apprehended by the watch for diverse outrages.

The first who came upon his trial, was as bloody a spectre as ever the imagination of a murderer or a tragic poet conceived. This poor wretch was charged with a battery by a much stouter man than himself; indeed the accused person bore about him some evidence that he had been in an affray, his cloaths being very bloody: but certain open sluices on his own head sufficiently shewed whence all the scarlet stream had issued: whereas the accuser had not the least mark or appearance of any wound. The justice asked the defendant, what he meant by

breaking the king's peace—To which he answered,—‘ Upon my shoul I do love the king very well, and I have not been after breaking any thing of his that I do know : but upon my shoul this man hath brake my head, and my head did brake his stick ; that is all, gra.’ He then offered to produce several witnesses against this improbable accusation ; but the justice presently interrupted him, saying, ‘ Sirrah, your tongue betrays your guilt. You are an Irishman, and that is always sufficient evidence with me.’

The second criminal was a poor woman, who was taken up by the watch as a street-walker. It was alleged against her that she was found walking the streets after twelve o'clock, and the watchman declared he believed her to be a common strumpet. She pleaded in her defence (as was really the truth) that she was a servant, and was sent by her mistress, who was a little shopkeeper, and upon the point of delivery, to fetch a midwife ; which she offered to prove by several of the neighbours, if she was allowed to send for them. The justice asked her why she had not done it before. To which she answered, she had no money, and could get no messenger. The justice then called her several scurrilous names ; and declaring she was guilty within the statute of street-walking, ordered her to Bridewell for a month.

A genteel young man and woman were then set forward, and a very grave looking person swore he caught them in a situation which we cannot as particularly describe here as he did before the magistrate ; who, having received a wink from his clerk, declared with much warmth that the fact was incredible and impossible. He presently discharged the accused parties, and was going, without any evidence, to commit the accuser for perjury ; but this the clerk dissuaded him from, saying, he doubted whether a justice of peace had any such power. The justice at first differed in opinion ; and said, ‘ He had seen a man stand in the pillory about perjury ; nay, he had known a man in gaol for it too ; and how

‘ how came he there, if he was not committed
‘ thither? why that is true, sir,’ answered the clerk,
‘ and yet I have been told by a very great lawyer,
‘ that a man cannot be committed for perjury be-
‘ fore he is indicted; and the reason is, I believe,
‘ because it is not against the peace before the in-
‘ dictment makes it so.’ ‘ Why that may be,’ cries
the justice; ‘ and indeed perjury is but scandalous
‘ words, and I know a man cannot have no warrant
‘ for those, unless you put for rioting * them into
‘ the warrant.’

The witness was now about to be discharged, when the lady whom he had accused, declared she would swear the peace against him; for that he had called her a whore several times. ‘ Oho! you will swear the peace, madam, will you?’ cries the justice, ‘ Give her the peace presently; and pray, Mr. Constable, secure the prisoner, now we have him, while a warrant is made to take him up.’ All which was immediately performed, and the poor witness for want of sureties was sent to prison.

A young fellow, whose name was Booth, was now charged with beating the watchman in the execution of his office, and breaking his lanthorn. This was deposed by two witnesses; and the shattered remains of a broken lanthorn, which had been long preserved for the sake of its testimony, were produced to corroborate the evidence. The justice, perceiving the criminal to be but shabbily drest, was going to commit him without asking any further questions. At length, however, at the earnest request of the accused

* *Opus est interprete.* By the laws of England abusive words are not punishable by the magistrate; some commissioners of the peace therefore, when one scold hath applied to them for a warrant against another, from a too eager desire of doing justice, have construed a little harmless scolding into a riot, which is in law an outrageous breach of the peace, committed by several persons, by three at the least, nor can a less number be convicted of it. Under this word rioting, or riotting (for I have seen it spelt both ways) many thousands of old women have been arrested and put to expence, sometimes in prison, for a little intemperate use of their tongues. This practice began to decrease in the year 1749.

the worthy magistrate submitted to hear his defence. The young man then alledged, as was in reality the case, ‘ That as he was walking home to his lodging, ‘ he saw two men in the street cruelly beating a third, ‘ upon which he had stopt and endeavoured to assist ‘ the person who was so unequally attacked; that the ‘ watch came up during the affray, and took them ‘ all four into custody; that they were immediately ‘ carried to the round-house, where the two original assailants, who appeared to be men of fortune, ‘ found means to make up the matter, and were ‘ discharged by the constable; a favour which he ‘ himself, having no money in his pocket, was unable to obtain. He utterly denied having assaulted ‘ any of the watchmen, and solemnly declared, that ‘ he was offered his liberty at the price of half a ‘ crown.’

Though the bare word of an offender can never be taken against the oath of his accuser; yet the matter of this defence was so pertinent, and delivered with such an air of truth and sincerity, that, had the magistrate been endued with much sagacity, or had he been very moderately gifted with another quality very necessary to all who are to administer justice, he would have employed some labour in cross-examining the watchmen; at least he would have given the defendant the time he desired to send for the other persons who were present at the affray; neither of which he did. In short, the magistrate had too great an honour for truth to suspect that she ever appeared in sordid apparel; nor did he ever fally his sublime notions of that virtue, by uniting them with the mean ideas of poverty and distress.

There remained now only one prisoner, and that was the poor man himself in whose defence the last mentioned culprit was engaged. His trial took but a very short time. A cause of battery and broken lanthorn was instituted against him, and proved in the same manner; nor would the justice hear one word in defence: but though his patience was exhausted, his breath was not; for against this
last

last wretch he poured forth a great many vollies of menaces and abuse.

The delinquents were then all dispatched to prison, under a guard of watchmen; and the justice and the constable adjourned to a neighbouring ale-house, to take their morning repast.

C H A P. III.

Containing the inside of a prison.

MR. Booth (for we shall not trouble you with the rest) was no sooner arrived in the prison, than a number of persons gathered round him, all demanding garnish; to which Mr. Booth not making a ready answer, as indeed he did not understand the word, some were going to lay hold of him, when a person of apparent dignity came up and insisted that no one should affront the gentleman. This person then, who was no less than the master or keeper of the prison, turning towards Mr. Booth, acquainted him, that it was the custom of the place for every prisoner, upon his first arrival there, to give something to the former prisoners to make them drink. This, he said, was what they called garnish; and concluded with advising his new customer to draw his purse upon the present occasion. Mr. Booth answered, that he would very readily comply with this laudable custom, was it in his power; but that in reality he had not a shilling in his pocket, and what was worse, he had not a shilling in the world.—‘Oho! if that be the case,’ cries the keeper, ‘it is another matter, and I have nothing to say.’ Upon which he immediately departed, and left poor Booth to the mercy of his companions, who, without loss of time, applied themselves to uncasing, as they termed it, and with such dexterity, that his coat was not only stript off, but out of sight in a minute.

Mr. Booth was too weak to resist, and too wise to complain of this usage. As soon therefore as he was at liberty, and declared free of the place, he summoned his philosophy, of which he had no

inconsiderable share, to his assistance, and resolved to make himself as easy as possible under his present circumstances.

Could his own thoughts indeed have suffered him a moment to forget where he was, the dispositions of the other prisoners might have induced him to believe that he had been in a happier place: for much the greater part of his fellow-sufferers, instead of wailing and repining at their condition, were laughing, singing, and diverting themselves with various kinds of sports and gambols.

The first person who accosted him was called Blear-Eyed Moll; a woman of no very comely appearance. Her eye (for she had but one) whence she derived her nick-name, was such as that nick-name bespoke; besides which it had two remarkable qualities; for first, as if nature had been careful to provide for her own defect, it constantly looked towards her blind side; and secondly, the ball consisted almost entirely of white, or rather yellow, with a little grey spot in the corner, so small that it was scarce discernible. Nose she had none; for Venus, envious perhaps at her former charms, had carried off the gristly part; and some earthly damsel, perhaps from the same envy, had levelled the bone with the rest of her face: indeed it was far beneath the bones of her cheeks, which rose proportionally higher than is usual. About half a dozen ebony teeth fortified that large and long canal, which nature had cut from ear to ear, at the bottom of which was a chin, preposterously short, nature having turned up the bottom, instead of suffering it to grow to its due length.

Her body was well adapted to her face; she measured full as much round the middle as from head to foot; for besides the extreme breadth of her back, her vast breasts had long since forsaken their native home, and had settled themselves a little below the girdle.

I wish certain actresses on the stage, when they are to perform characters of no amiable cast, would study to dress themselves with the propriety with which

which Blear-Eyed-Moll was now arrayed. For the sake of our squeamish reader, we shall not descend to particulars. Let it suffice to say, nothing more ragged, or more dirty, was ever emptied out of the round house at St. Giles's.

We have taken the more pains to describe this person, for two remarkable reasons; the one is, that this unlovely creature was taken in the fact with a very pretty young fellow; the other, which is more productive of moral lesson, is, that however wretched her fortune may appear to the reader, she was one of the merriest persons in the whole prison.

Blear-Eyed-Moll then came up to Mr. Booth with a smile, or rather grin on her countenance, and asked him for a dram of gin; and when Booth assured her that he had not a penny of money, she replied, — ‘D——n your eyes, I thought by your look you had been a clever fellow, and upon the snaffling lay * at least: but d——n your body and eyes, I find you are some sneaking budge † rascal.’ She then launched forth a volley of dreadful oaths, interlarded with some language not proper to be repeated here, and was going to lay hold on poor Booth, when a tall prisoner, who had been very earnestly eyeing Booth for some time, came up, and taking her by the shoulder, flung her off at some distance, cursing her for a b—h, and bidding her let the gentleman alone.

This person was not himself of the most inviting aspect. He was long visaged, and pale, with a red beard of above a fortnight's growth. He was attired in a brownish black coat, which would have shewed more holes than it did, had not the linen which appeared through it, been entirely of the same colour with the cloth.

This gentleman, whose name was Robinson, addressed himself very civilly to Mr. Booth, and told him he was sorry to see one of his appearance in that place: ‘For as to your being without your coat,

* A cant term for robbery on the high-way.

† Another cant term for pilfering.

‘fir,’ says he, ‘I can easily account for that; and
‘indeed dress is the least part which distinguishes a
‘gentleman.’ At which words he cast a significant
look on his own coat, as if he desired they should
be applied to himself. He then proceeded in the fol-
lowing manner:

‘I perceive, fir, you are but just arrived in this
‘dismal place, which is, indeed, rendered more
‘detestable by the wretches who inhabit it, than
‘by any other circumstance; but even these a wise
‘man will soon bring himself to bear with indiffe-
‘rence: for what is, is; and what must be, must
‘be. The knowledge of this, which, simple as it
‘appears, is in truth the height of all philosophy,
‘renders a wise man superior to every evil which
‘can befall him. I hope, fir, no very dreadful ac-
‘cident is the cause of your coming hither; but
‘whatever it was, you may be assured it could not
‘be otherwise: for all things happen by an inevi-
‘table fatality; and a man can no more resist the
‘impulse of fate, than a wheel-barrow can the force
‘of its driver.’

Besides the obligation which Mr. Robinson had
conferred on Mr. Booth, in delivering him from
the insults of Blear-Eyed-Moll, there was some-
thing in the manner of Robinson, which, notwith-
standing the meanness of his dress, seemed to dis-
tinguish him from the crowd of wretches who
swarmed in those regions; and above all, the sen-
timents which he had just declared, very nearly
coincided with those of Mr. Booth: this gentleman
was what they call a free-thinker: that is to say, a
deist; or, perhaps, an atheist; for though he did
not absolutely deny the existence of a God; yet
he entirely denied his providence. A doctrine
which, if it is not downright atheism, hath a direct
tendency towards it; and, as Dr. Clarke observes,
may soon be driven into it. And as to Mr. Booth,
though he was in his heart an extreme well-wisher to
religion (for he was an honest man) yet his notions
of it were very slight and uncertain. To say truth,
he

he was in the wavering condition so finely described by Claudian :

labefacta cadebat

*Religio, causæque viam non sponte sequebar
Alterius ; vacuo quæ currere semina motu
Affirmat ; magnumque novas per inane figuras
Fortuna, non arte, regi ; que numina sensu
Ambiguo, vel nulla putat, vel nescia nostri.*

This way of thinking, or rather of doubting, he had contracted from the same reasons which Claudian assigns, and which had induced Brutus, in his latter days, to doubt the existence of that virtue which he had all his life cultivated. In short, poor Booth imagined, that a larger share of misfortunes had fallen to his lot than he had merited ; and this led him, who (though a good classical scholar) was not deeply learned in religious matters, into a disadvantageous opinion of providence. A dangerous way of reasoning, in which our conclusions are not only too hasty, from an imperfect view of things ; but we are likewise liable to much error from partiality to ourselves ; viewing our virtues and vices as through a perspective, in which we turn the glass always to our own advantage, so as to diminish the one, and as greatly to magnify the other.

From the above reasons, it can be no wonder that Mr. Booth did not decline the acquaintance of this person, in a place which could not promise to afford him any better. He answered him, therefore, with great courtesy, as indeed he was of a very good and gentle disposition ; and after expressing a civil surprise at meeting him there, declared himself to be of the same opinion with regard to the necessity of human actions ; adding, however, that he did not believe men were under any blind impulse or direction of fate ; but that every man acted merely from the force of that passion which was uppermost in his mind, and could do no otherwise.

A discourse now ensued between the two gentlemen, on the necessity arising from the impulse of fate, and the necessity arising from the impulse of passion, which

as it will make a pretty pamphlet of itself, we shall reserve for some future opportunity. When this was ended, they set forward to survey the gaol, and the prisoners, with the several cases of whom Mr. Robinson, who had been some time under confinement, undertook to make Mr. Booth acquainted.

C H A P. IV.

Disclosing further secrets of the prison-house.

THE first persons whom they past by were three men in fetters, who were enjoying themselves very merrily over a bottle of wine, and a pipe of tobacco. These, Mr. Robinson informed his friend, were three street-robbers, and were all certain of being hanged the ensuing sessions. So inconsiderable an object, said he, is misery to light minds, when it is at any distance.

A little farther they beheld a man prostrate on the ground, whose heavy groans, and frantic actions, plainly indicated the highest disorder of mind. This person was, it seems, committed for a small felony; and his wife, who then lay-in, upon hearing the news, had thrown herself from a window two pair of stairs high, by which means he had, in all probability, lost both her and his child.

A very pretty girl then advanced towards them, whose beauty Mr. Booth could not help admiring the moment he saw her; declaring, at the same time, he thought she had great innocence in her countenance. Robinson said she was committed thither as an idle and disorderly person, and a common street-walker. As she passed by Mr. Booth, she damn'd his eyes, and discharged a volley of words, every one of which was too indecent to be repeated.

They now beheld a little creature sitting by herself in a corner and crying bitterly. This girl, Mr. Robinson said, was committed, because her father-in-law, who was in the grenadier guards, had sworn that he was afraid of his life, or of some bodily harm, which she would do him, and she could get
no

no sureties for keeping the peace: for which reason justice Thrasher had committed her to prison.

A great noise now arose, occasioned by the prisoners all flocking to see a fellow whipt for petty larceny, to which he was condemned by the court of quarter-sessions; but this soon ended in the disappointment of the spectators: for the fellow, after being stript, having advanced another six-pence, was discharged untouched.

This was immediately followed by another bustle. Blear Eyed-Moll, and several of her companions, having got possession of a man who was committed for certain odious unmanlike practices, not fit to be named, were giving him various kinds of discipline, and would probably have put an end to him, had he not been rescued out of their hands by authority.

When this bustle was a little allayed, Mr. Booth took notice of a young woman in rags sitting on the ground, and supporting the head of an old man in her lap, who appeared to be giving up the ghost. These, Mr. Robinson informed him, were father and daughter; that the latter was committed for stealing a loaf, in order to support the former, and the former for receiving it knowing to be stolen.

A well-drest man then walked surlily by them, whom Mr. Robinson reported to have been committed on an indictment found against him for a most horrid perjury; but, says he, we expect him to be bailed to-day. Good heaven! cries Booth, can such villains find bail, and is no person charitable enough to bail that poor father and daughter? oh! sir, answered Robinson, the offence of the daughter, being felony, is held not to beailable in law; whereas perjury is a misdemeanor only; and therefore persons who are even indicted for it, are, nevertheless, capable of being bailed. Nay, of all perjuries, that of which this man is indicted is the worst: for it was with an intention of taking away the life of an innocent person by form of law. As to perjuries in civil matters, they are not so very criminal. They are not, said Booth: and yet even these

these are a most flagitious offence, and worthy the highest punishment. Surely they ought to be distinguished, answered Robinson, from the others: for what is taking away a little property from a man compared to taking away his life, and his reputation, and ruining his family into the bargain?—I hope there can be no comparison in the crimes, and I think there ought to be none in the punishment. However, at present, the punishment of all perjury is only pillory, and transportation for seven years; and as it is a traversable andailable offence, methods are often found to escape any punishment at all*.

Booth expressed great astonishment at this, when his attention was suddenly diverted by the most miserable object that he had yet seen. This was a wretch almost naked, and who bore in his countenance, joined to an appearance of honesty, the marks of poverty, hunger, and disease. He had, moreover, a wooden leg, and two or three scars on his forehead. The case of this poor man is, indeed, unhappy enough, said Robinson. He hath served his country, lost his limb, and received several wounds at the siege of Gibraltar. When he was discharged from the hospital abroad, he came over to get into that of Chelsea, but could not immediately, as none of his officers were then in England. In the mean time, he was one day apprehended and committed hither on suspicion of stealing three herrings from a fishmonger. He was tried several months ago for this offence, and acquitted; indeed his innocence manifestly appeared at the trial; but he was brought back again for his fees, and here he hath lain ever since.

Booth expressed great horror at this account, and declared if he had only so much money in his pocket, he would pay his fees for him; but added,

* By removing the indictment by *certiorari* into the King's-bench, the trial is so long postponed, and the costs are so highly increased, that prosecutors are often tired out, and some incapacitated from pursuing. *Verbum sapienti,*

that he was not posselt of a single farthing in the world.

Robinson hesitated a moment, and then said, with a smile, ‘ I am going to make you, sir, a very odd
‘ proposal after your last declaration ; but what
‘ say you to a game at cards ? it will serve to pass a
‘ tedious hour, and may divert your Thoughts from
‘ more unpleasant speculations.’

I do not imagine Booth would have agreed to this : for though some love of gaming had been formerly amongst his faults ; yet he was not so egregiously addicted to that vice, as to be tempted by the shabby plight of Robinson, who had, if I may so express myself, no charms for a gamester. If he had, however, any such inclinations, he had no opportunity to follow them : for before he could make any answer to Robinson’s proposal, a strapping wench came up to Booth, and taking hold of his arm, asked him to walk aside with her ; saying, ‘ What a pox, are you
‘ such a fresh cull that you do not know this fellow ?
‘ why, he is a gambler, and committed for cheating
‘ at play. There is not such a pickpocket in the
‘ whole quad*.’

A scene of altercation now ensued, between Robinson and the lady, which ended in a bout at fisticuffs, in which the lady was greatly superior to the philosopher.

While the two combatants were engaged, a grave looking man, rather better drest than the majority of the company, came up to Mr. Booth, and taking him aside, said, ‘ I am sorry, sir, to see a gentleman,
‘ as you appear to be, in such intimacy with that
‘ rascal, who makes no scruple of disowning all revealed religion. As for crimes, they are human
‘ errors, and signify but little ; nay, perhaps the
‘ worse a man is by nature, the more room there is for
‘ grace. The spirit is active, and loves best to inhabit those minds where it may meet with the most
‘ work. Whatever your crime be, therefore, I would
‘ not have you despair ; but rather rejoice at it : for
‘ perhaps it may be the means of your being called.’

* A cant word for a prison.

He ran on for a considerable time with this cant, without waiting for an answer, and ended in declaring himself a methodist.

Just as the methodist had finished his discourse, a beautiful young woman was ushered into the gaol. She was genteel and well drest, and did not in the least resemble those females whom Mr. Booth had hitherto seen. The constable had no sooner delivered her at the gate, than she asked, with a commanding voice, for the keeper; and, when he arrived, she said to him, 'well, sir, whither am I to be conducted?' 'I hope I am not to take up my lodging with these creatures.' The keeper answered with a kind of surly respect, 'Madam, we have rooms for those that can afford to pay for them.' At these words she pulled a handsome purse from her pocket, in which many guineas chinked, saying, with an air of indignation, 'that she was not come thither on account of poverty.' The keeper no sooner viewed the purse, than his features became all softened in an instant; and with all the courtesy of which he was master, he desired the lady to walk with him, assuring her that she should have the best apartment in his house.

Mr. Booth was now left alone; for the methodist had forsaken him, having, as the phrase of the sect is, searched him to the bottom. In fact, he had thoroughly examined every one of Mr. Booth's pockets; from which he had conveyed away a pen-knife, and an iron snuff-box, these being all the moveables which were to be found.

Booth was standing near the gate of the prison, when the young lady above-mentioned was introduced into the yard. He viewed her features very attentively, and was persuaded that he knew her. She was indeed so remarkably handsome, that it was hardly possible for any who had ever seen her to forget her. He enquired of one of the under-keepers, if the name of the prisoner lately arrived was not Matthews; to which he was answered, that her name was not Matthews but Vincent, and that she was committed for murder.

The

The latter part of this information made Mr. Booth suspect his memory more than the former : for it was very possible that she might have changed her name ; but he hardly thought she could so far have changed her nature as to be guilty of a crime so very incongruous with her former gentle manners : for Miss Matthews had both the birth and education of a gentlewoman. He concluded, therefore, that he was certainly mistaken, and rested satisfied without any further enquiry.

C H A P. V.

Containing certain adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the prison.

THE remainder of the day Mr. Booth spent in melancholy contemplation on his present condition. He was destitute of the common necessities of life, and consequently unable to subsist where he was ; nor was there a single person in town to whom he could, with any reasonable hope, apply for his delivery. Grief for some time banished the thoughts of food from his mind ; but, in the morning, nature began to grow uneasy for want of her usual nourishment : for he had not eat a morsel during the last forty hours. A penny loaf, which is, it seems, the ordinary allowance to the prisoners in Bridewell, was now delivered him ; and while he was eating this, a man brought him a little packet sealed up, informing him that it came by a messenger who said it required no answer.

Mr. Booth now opened his packet, and after unfolding several pieces of blank paper successively, at last discovered a guinea, wrapt with great care in the innermost paper. He was vastly surpris'd at this sight, as he had few, if any friends, from whom he could expect such a favour, slight as it was ; and not one of his friends, as he was apprised, knew of his confinement. As there was no direction to the packet, nor a word of writing contained in it, he began to suspect that it was delivered to the wrong person ; and, being one of the most untainted honestly, he found out the man who gave it to him, and again examined him concerning the person who brought it, and

and the message delivered with it. The man assured Booth that he had made no mistake ; saying, ‘ if your name is Booth, sir, I am positive you are the gentleman to whom the parcel I gave you belongs.’

The most scrupulous honesty would, perhaps, in such a situation, have been well enough satisfied in finding no owner for the guinea ; especially when proclamation had been made in the prison, that Mr. Booth had received a packet without any direction, to which, if any person had any claim, and would discover the contents, he was ready to deliver it to such claimant. No such claimant being found, (I mean none who knew the contents ; for many swore that they expected just such a packet, and believed it to be their property) Mr. Booth very calmly resolved to apply the money to his own use.

The first thing after redemption of the coat, which Mr. Booth, hungry as he was, thought of, was to supply himself with snuff, which he had long, to his great sorrow, been without. On this occasion, he presently missed that iron box which the methodist had so dextrously conveyed out of his pocket, as we mentioned in the last chapter.

He no sooner missed this box, than he immediately suspected that the gambler was the person who had stolen it ; nay, so well was he assured of this man’s guilt, that it may, perhaps, be improper to say he barely suspected it. Though Mr. Booth was, as we have hinted, a man of a very sweet disposition ; yet was he rather over-warm. Having, therefore, no doubt concerning the person of the thief, he eagerly sought him out, and very bluntly charged him with the fact.

The gambler, whom I think we should now call the philosopher, received this charge without the least visible emotion either of mind or muscle. After a short pause of a few moments, he answered, with great solemnity, as follows : ‘ Young man, I am entirely unconcerned at your groundless suspicion. He that censures a stranger, as I am to you, without any cause, makes a worse compliment to himself than to the stranger. You know yourself, friend

‘ friend ; you know not me. It is true indeed you
‘ heard me accused of being a cheat and a gamester ;
‘ but who is my accuser ? look at my apparel, friend,
‘ do thieves and gamesters wear such cloaths as these ?
‘ play is my folly, not my vice ; it is my impulse,
‘ and I have been a martyr to it. Would a gamester
‘ have asked another to play when he could have lost
‘ eighteen pence and won nothing ? however, if you
‘ are not satisfied you may search my pockets ; the
‘ outside of all but one will serve your turn, and in
‘ that one, there is the eighteen pence I told you of.’
He then turned up his cloaths ; and his pockets entirely resembled the pitchers of the Belides.

Booth was a little staggered at this defence. He said, the real value of the iron box was too inconsiderable to mention ; but that he had a capricious value for it, for the sake of the person who gave it him : ‘ for though it is not,’ said he, ‘ worth six-pence, I
‘ would willingly give a crown to any one who would
‘ bring it me again.’

Robinson answered, ‘ if that be the case, you have
‘ nothing more to do but to signify your intention in
‘ the prison ; and I am well convinced you will not
‘ be long without regaining the possession of your
‘ snuff-box.’

This advice was immediately followed, and with success, the methodist presently producing the box ; which, he said, he had found, and should have returned it before, had he known the person to whom it belonged ; adding, with uplifted eyes, that the spirit would not suffer him knowingly to detain the goods of another, however inconsiderable the value was. ‘ Why so, friend ?’ said Robinson. ‘ Have
‘ I not heard you often say, the wickedder any man
‘ was, the better, provided he was what you call a
‘ believer.’ ‘ You mistake me,’ cries Cooper (for that was the name of the methodist) ‘ no man can be
‘ wicked after he is possessed by the spirit. There is
‘ a wide difference between the days of sin, and the
‘ days of grace. I have been a sinner myself.’ ‘ I
‘ believe thee,’ cries Robinson, with a sneer. ‘ I care
‘ not, answered the other, what an atheist believes.
‘ I suppose you would insinuate that I stole the snuff-
‘ box

‘ box ; but I value not your malice : the Lord knows
‘ my innocence.’ He then walked off with the re-
ward ; and Booth turning to Robinson, very earnestly
asked pardon for his groundless suspicion ; which the
other, without any hesitation, accorded him, saying,
‘ you never accused me, sir ; you suspected some
‘ gambler, with whose character I have no concern.
‘ I should be angry with a friend or acquaintance who
‘ should give a hasty credit to any allegation against
‘ me ; but I have no reason to be offended with you
‘ for believing what the woman, and the rascal who
‘ is just gone, and who is committed here for a pick-
‘ pocket, which you did not perhaps know, told you
‘ to my disadvantage. And if you thought me to be
‘ a gambler, you had just reason to suspect any ill of
‘ me : for I myself am confined here by the perjury
‘ of one of those villains ; who having cheated me
‘ of my money at play, and hearing that I intended
‘ to apply to a magistrate against him, himself began
‘ the attack, and obtained a warrant against me of
‘ justice Thrasher, who, without hearing one speech
‘ in my defence, committed me to this place.’

Booth testified great compassion at this account ;
and he having invited Robinson to dinner, they spent
that day together. In the afternoon Booth indulged,
his friend with a game at cards ; at first for half-pence,
and afterwards for shillings, when fortune so favoured
Robinson, that he did not leave the other a single
shilling in his pocket.

A surprising run of luck in a gamester, is often
mistaken for somewhat else, by persons who are not
over zealous believers in the divinity of fortune.
I have known a stranger at Bath, who hath happened
fortunately (I might almost say unfortunately) to have
four by honours in his hand almost every time he
dealt, for a whole evening, shunned universally by
the whole company the next day. And certain it is,
that Mr. Booth, though of a temper very little incli-
ned to suspicion, began to waver in his opinion, whe-
ther the character given by Mr. Robinson of himself,
or that which the others gave of him, was the truer.

In

In the morning, hunger paid him a second visit, and found him again in the same situation as before. After some deliberation, therefore, he resolved to ask Robinson to lend him a shilling or two of that money which was lately his own. And this experiment, he thought, would confirm him either in a good or evil opinion of that gentleman.

To this demand, Robinson answered, with great alacrity, that he should very gladly have complied, had not fortune played one of her jade tricks with him: 'for since my winning of you,' said he, 'I have been stript not only of your money, but my own.' He was going to harangue farther; but Booth, with great indignation, turned from him.

This poor gentleman had very little time to reflect on his own misery, or the rascality, as it appeared to him, of the other, when the same person, who had the day before delivered him the guinea from the unknown hand, again accosted him, and told him a lady in the house (so he expressed himself) desired the favour of his company.

Mr. Booth immediately obeyed the message, and was conducted into a room in the prison, where he was presently convinced that Mrs. Vincent was no other than his old acquaintance Miss Matthews.

C H A P. VI.

Containing the extraordinary behaviour of Miss Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and some endeavours to prove, by reason and authority, that it is possible for a woman to appear to be what she really is not.

EIGHT or nine years had past since any interview between Mr. Booth and Miss Matthews; and their meeting now in so extraordinary a place affected both of them with an equal surprise.

After some immaterial ceremonies, the lady acquainted Mr. Booth, that having heard there was a person in the prison who knew her by the name of Matthews, she had great curiosity to enquire who
he

he was, whereupon he had been shewn to her from the window of the house ; that she immediately recollected him, and being informed of his distressful situation, for which she expressed great concern, she had sent him that guinea which he had received the day before ; and then proceeded to excuse herself for not having desired to see him at that time, when she was under the greatest disorder and hurry of spirits.

Booth made many handsome acknowledgments of her favour ; and added, that he very little wondered at the disorder of her spirits, concluding, that he was heartily concerned at seeing her there ; but I hope, madam, said he——

Here he hesitated ; upon which, bursting into an agony of tears, she cried out, ‘ O captain, captain, many extraordinary things have past since last I saw you. O gracious heaven ! did I ever expect that this would be the next place of our meeting !’

She then flung herself into her chair, where she gave a loose to her passion, whilst he, in the most affectionate and tender manner, endeavoured to sooth and comfort her ; but passion itself did, probably, more for its own relief than all his friendly consolations. Having vented this in a large flood of tears, she became pretty well composed ; but Booth unhappily mentioning her father, she again relapsed into an agony, and cried out, ‘ Why ? why will you repeat the name of that dear man ? I have disgraced him, Mr. Booth, I am unworthy the name of his daughter.’—Here passion again stopped her words, and discharged itself in tears.

After this second vent of sorrow or shame ; or, if the reader pleases, of rage, she once more recovered from her agonies. To say the truth, these are, I believe, as critical discharges of nature, as any of those which are so called by the physicians ; and do more effectually relieve the mind than any remedies with which the whole *Materia Medica* of philosophy can supply it.

When Mrs. Vincent had recovered her faculties, she perceived Booth standing silent, with a mixture of concern and astonishment in his countenance ;
then

then addressing herself to him with an air of most bewitching softness, of which she was a perfect mistress, she said, ‘ I do not wonder at your amazement, Captain Booth ; nor indeed at the concern which you so plainly discover for me : for I well know the goodness of your nature ; but, O Mr. Booth ! believe me, when you know what hath happened since our last meeting, your concern will be raised, however your astonishment may cease. O, sir, you are a stranger to the cause of my sorrows.’

‘ I hope, I am, madam,’ answered he ; ‘ for I cannot believe what I have heard in the prison—surely murder’—at which words she started from her chair, repeating, murder ! ‘ Oh ! it is music in my ears.—You have heard then the cause of my commitment, my glory, my delight, my reparation !—Yes, my old friend, this is the hand, this is the arm that drove the pen-knife to his heart. Unkind fortune, that not one drop of his blood reached my hand.—Indeed, sir, I would never have washed it from it.—But though I have not the happiness to see it on my hand, I have the glorious satisfaction of remembering I saw it run in rivers on the floor ; I saw it forsake his cheeks. I saw him fall a martyr to my revenge. And is the killing a villain to be called murder ? perhaps the law calls it so.—Let it call it what it will, or punish me as it pleases.—Punish me !—no, no—That is not in the power of man—not of that monster man, Mr. Booth. I am undone, am revenged, and have now no more business for life ; let them take it from me when they will.’

Our poor gentleman turned pale with horror at this speech, and the ejaculation of Good Heavens ! what do I hear ! burst spontaneously from his lips ; nor can we wonder at this, though he was the bravest of men ; for her voice, her looks, her gestures, were properly adapted to the sentiments she expressed. Such indeed was her image, that neither could Shakespear describe, nor Hogarth paint, nor Clive act a fury in higher perfection.

‘ What do you hear ?’ reiterated she. ‘ You hear the resentment of the most injured of women. You have heard, you say, of the murder ; but do you know the cause, Mr. Booth ? have you, since your return to England, visited that country where we formerly knew one another ? tell me, do you know my wretched story ? tell me that, my friend.’

Booth hesitated for an answer ; indeed he had heard some imperfect stories, not much to her advantage. She waited not till he had formed a speech ; but cried, ‘ Whatever you may have heard, you cannot be acquainted with all the strange accidents which have occasioned your seeing me in a place, which, at our last parting, was so unlikely, that I should ever have been found in ; nor can you know the cause of all that I have uttered, and which, I am convinced, you never expected to have heard from my mouth. If these circumstances raise your curiosity, I will satisfy it.’

He answered, that curiosity was too mean a word to express his ardent desire of knowing her story. Upon which, with very little previous ceremony, she began to relate what is written in the following chapter.

But before we put an end to this, it may be necessary to whisper a word or two to the critics, who have, perhaps, begun to express no less astonishment than Mr. Booth, that a lady, in whom we had remarked a most extraordinary power of displaying softness, should, the very next moment after the words were out of our mouth, express sentiments becoming the lips of a Dalila, Jezebel, Medea, Semiramis, Parysatis, Tanaquil, Livilla, Messalina, Agrippina, Brunichilde, Elfrida, lady Macbeth, Joan of Naples, Christina of Sweden, Katharine Hays, Sarah Malcolm, Con. Philips *, or any other heroine of the tender sex, which history, sacred or prophane, antient or modern, false or true, hath recorded.

We desire such critics to remember, that it is the same English climate, in which, on the lovely 10th of June, under a serene sky, the amorous Jacobite

kissing

* Though last, not least.

kissing the odoriferous zephyr's breath, gathers a nose-gay of white roses to deck the whiter breast of Celia; and in which, on the 11th of June, the very next day, the boisterous boreas, roused by the hollow thunder, rushes horrible through the air, and driving the wet tempest before him, levels the hope of the husbandman with the earth, dreadful remembrance of the consequences of the revolution.

Again let it be remembered, that it is the self same Celia, all tender, soft, and delicate; who with a voice, the sweetness of which the Sirens might envy, warbles the harmonious song in praise of the young adventurer; and again, the next day, or, perhaps the next hour, with fiery eyes, wrinkled brows, and foaming lips, roars forth treason and nonsense in a political argument with some fair one, of a different principle.

Or, if the critic be a whig, and consequently dislikes such kind of similes, as being too favourable to jacobitism, let him be contented with the following story:

I happened in my youth to sit behind two ladies in a side-box at a play, where, in the balcony on the opposite side was placed the inimitable B——y C——s, in company with a young fellow of no very formal, or indeed sober, appearance. One of the ladies, I remember, said to the other—‘Did you ever see any thing look so modest and so innocent as that girl over the way? what pity it is such a creature should be in the way of ruin, as I am afraid she is, by her being alone with that young fellow!’ Now this lady was no bad physiognomist; for it was impossible to conceive a greater appearance of modesty, innocence, and simplicity, than what nature had displayed in the countenance of that girl; and yet, all appearances notwithstanding, I myself (remember, critic, it was in my youth) had a few mornings before seen that very identical picture of all those engaging qualities in bed with a rake at a bagnio, smoaking tobacco, drinking punch, talking obscenity, and swearing and cursing with all the impudence and impiety of the lowest and most abandoned trull of a soldier.

CHAP. VII.

In which Miss Matthews begins her history.

MISS Matthews having barred the door on the inside, as securely as it was before barred on the outside, proceeded as follows:

‘ You may imagine, I am going to begin my history at the time when you left the country ; but I cannot help reminding you of something which happened before. You will soon recollect the incident ; but I believe you little know the consequence either at that time or since. Alas ! I could keep a secret then : now I have no secrets ; the world knows all ; and it is not worth my while to conceal any thing. Well !—You will not wonder, I believe.—I protest I can hardly tell it you even now.—But I am convinced you have too good an opinion of yourself to be surpris’d at any conquest you may have made.—Few men want that good opinion—and perhaps very few had ever more reason for it. Indeed, Will, you was a charming fellow in those days ; nay, you are not much altered for the worse now, at least in the opinion of some women : for your complexion and features are grown much more masculine than they were.’ Here Booth made her a low bow, most probably with a compliment ; and, after a little hesitation, she again proceeded—‘ Do you remember a contest which happened at an assembly, betwixt myself and Miss Johnson, about standing uppermost ? you was then my partner ; and young Williams danced with the other lady. The particulars are not now worth mentioning, though I suppose you have long since forgot them. Let it suffice that you supported my claim, and Williams very sneakingly gave up that of his partner, who was, with much difficulty, afterwards prevailed to dance with him. You said, —I am sure I repeat the words exactly, that ‘ you would not for the world affront any lady there ; but that you thought you might, without any such danger

ger, declare that there was no assembly in which that lady, meaning your humble servant, was not worthy of the uppermost place; nor will I, said you, suffer the first duke in England, when she is at the uppermost end of the room, and hath called her dance, to lead his partner above her.

What made this the more pleasing to me was, that I secretly hated Miss Johnson. Will you have the reason? why then, I will tell you honestly, she was my rival;—that word perhaps astonishes you, as you never, I believe, heard of any one who made his addresses to me; and indeed my heart was till that night, entirely indifferent to all mankind. I mean then, that she was my rival for praise, for beauty, for dress, for fortune, and consequently for admiration. My triumph on this conquest is not to be expressed, any more than my delight in the person to whom I chiefly owed it. The former, I fancy, was visible to the whole company; and I desired it should be so; but the latter was so well concealed, that no one, I am confident, took any notice of it. And yet you appeared to me that night to be an angel. You looked, you danced, you spoke—every thing charmed me.

‘Good heavens!’ cries Booth, is it possible you should do me so much unmerited honour, and I should be duncce enough not to perceive the least symptom!’

‘I assure you,’ answered she, ‘I did all I could to prevent you; and yet I almost hated you for not seeing through what I strove to hide. Why, Mr. Booth, was you not more quick-sighted?—I will answer for you—your affections were more happily disposed of to a much better woman than myself, whom you married soon afterwards. I should ask you for her, Mr. Booth; I should have asked you for her before; but I am unworthy of asking for her, or of calling her my acquaintance.’

Booth stopt her short, as she was running into another fit of passion, and begged her to omit all former matters, and acquaint him with that part of her history to which he was an entire stranger.

She then renewed her discourse as follows: ‘ You know, Mr. Booth, I soon afterwards left that town, upon the death of my grandmother, and returned home to my father’s house; where I had not been long arrived before some troops of dragoons came to quarter in our neighbourhood. Among the officers, there was a cornet, whose detested name was Hebbers, a name I could scarce repeat, had I not at the same time the pleasure to reflect that he is now no more. My father, you know, who is a hearty well-wisher to the present government, used always to invite the officers to his house; so did he these. Nor was it long before this cornet, in so particular a manner recommended himself to the poor old gentleman (I cannot think of him without tears) that our house became his principal habitation; and he was rarely at his quarters, unless when his superior officers obliged him to be there. I shall say nothing of his person, nor could that be any recommendation to a man; it was such, however, as no woman could have made an objection to. Nature had certainly wrapt up her odious work in a most beautiful covering. To say the truth, he was the handsomest man, except one only, that I ever saw—I assure you, I have seen a handsomer—but—well.—He had besides all the qualifications of a gentleman; was genteel, and extremely polite; spoke French well, and danced to a miracle; but what chiefly recommended him to my father, was his skill in music, of which you know that dear man was the most violent lover. I wish he was not too susceptible of flattery on that head; for I have heard Hebbers often greatly commend my father’s performance, and have observed, that the good man was wonderfully pleased with such commendations. To say the truth, it is the only way I can account for the extraordinary friendship which my father

‘ father conceived for this person ; such a friendship
‘ that he at last became a part of our family.

‘ This very circumstance, which, as I am con-
‘ vinced, strongly recommended him to my father,
‘ had the very contrary effect with me ; I had never
‘ any delight in music, and it was not without much
‘ difficulty I was prevailed on to learn to play on
‘ the harpsichord, in which I had made a very slender
‘ progress. As this man, therefore, was frequently
‘ the occasion of my being importuned to
‘ play against my will, I began to entertain some
‘ dislike for him on that account ; and as to his person,
‘ I assure you, I long continued to look on it with
‘ great indifference.

‘ How strange will the art of this man appear
‘ to you presently, who had sufficient address to
‘ convert that very circumstance which had at first
‘ occasioned my dislike, into the first seeds of affection
‘ for him !

‘ You have often, I believe, heard my sister Betty
‘ play on the harpsichord ; she was indeed reputed
‘ the best performer in the whole country.

‘ I was the farthest in the world from regarding
‘ this perfection of hers with envy. In reality,
‘ perhaps, I despised all perfection of this kind ;
‘ at least, as I had neither skill nor ambition to
‘ excel this way, I looked upon it as a matter of
‘ mere indifference.

‘ Hebberts first put this emulation in my head.
‘ He took great pains to persuade me, that I had
‘ much greater abilities of the musical kind than
‘ my sister ; and that I might with the greatest
‘ ease, if I pleased, excel her ; offering me, at the
‘ same time, his assistance, if I would resolve to undertake it.

‘ When he had sufficiently inflamed my ambition,
‘ in which perhaps he found too little difficulty, the
‘ continual praises of my sister, which before I had
‘ disregarded, became more and more nauseous in
‘ my ears ; and the rather as music being the favourite
‘ passion of my father, I became apprehensive
‘ (not without frequent hints from Hebberts of that
‘ nature)

‘ nature) that she might gain too great a preference
‘ in his favour.

‘ To my harpsichord then I applied myself night
‘ and day, with such industry and attention, that
‘ I soon began to perform in a tolerable manner. I
‘ do not absolutely say I excelled my sister; for
‘ many were of a different opinion; but indeed
‘ there might be some partiality in all that.

‘ Hebbers, at least, declared himself on my side,
‘ and nobody could doubt his judgment. He
‘ asserted openly, that I played in the better man-
‘ ner of the two; and one day, when I was playing
‘ to him alone, he affected to burst into a rapture
‘ of admiration, and, squeezing me gently by the
‘ hand, said, There, madam, I now declare you ex-
‘ cel your sister as much in music as, added he, in a
‘ whispering sigh, you do her, and all the world, in
‘ every other charm.’

‘ No woman can bear any superiority in what-
‘ ever thing she desires to excel in. I now began
‘ to hate all the admirers of my sister, to be uneasy
‘ at every commendation bestowed on her skill in
‘ music, and consequently to love Hebbers for the
‘ preference which he gave to mine.

‘ It was now that I began to survey the hand-
‘ some person of Hebbers with pleasure. And here,
‘ Mr. Booth, I will betray to you the grand secret
‘ of our sex.—Many women, I believe, do, with
‘ great innocence, and even with great indifference,
‘ converse with men of the finest persons; but this
‘ I am confident may be affirmed with truth, that,
‘ when once a woman comes to ask this question
‘ of herself; is the man whom I like for some
‘ other reason handsome? her fate, and his too,
‘ very strongly depend on her answering in the
‘ affirmative.

‘ Hebbers no sooner perceived that he made an
‘ impression on my heart, of which, I am satisfied,
‘ I gave him too undeniable tokens, than he affect-
‘ ed, on a sudden, to shun me in the most apparent
‘ manner. He wore the most melancholy air in my
‘ presence, and, by his dejected looks and sighs,
‘ firmly

‘ firmly persuaded me, that there was some secret
‘ sorrow labouring in his bosom; nor will it be
‘ difficult for you to imagine to what cause I im-
‘ puted it.

‘ Whilst I was wishing for his declaration of a
‘ passion, in which, I thought, I could not be mista-
‘ ken, and, at the same time, trembling, whenever
‘ we met, with the apprehension of this very decla-
‘ ration, the widow Carey came from London to
‘ make us a visit, intending to stay the whole summer
‘ at our house.

‘ Those who know Mrs. Carey, will scarce think
‘ I do her an injury, in saying, she is far from be-
‘ ing handsome; and yet she is as finished a co-
‘ quette as if she had the highest beauty to support
‘ that character. But, perhaps, you have seen
‘ her; and, if you have, I am convinced you will
‘ readily subscribe to my opinion.’

Booth answered, he had not; and then she pro-
ceeded as in the following chapter.

C H A P. VIII.

The history of Miss Matthews continued.

‘ **T**HIS young lady had not been three days
‘ with us, before Hebbers grew so particular
‘ with her, that it was generally observed, and my
‘ poor father, who, I believe, loved the cornet as
‘ if he had been his son, began to jest on the oc-
‘ casion, as one who would not be displeased at
‘ throwing a good jointure into the arms of his
‘ friend.

‘ You will easily guess, sir, the disposition of my
‘ mind on this occasion; but I was not permitted
‘ to suffer long under it; for one day, when Heb-
‘ bers was alone with me, he took an opportunity
‘ of expressing his abhorrence at the thoughts of
‘ marrying for interest, contrary to his inclinations.
‘ I was warm on the subject, and I believe, went so
‘ far as to say, that none but fools and villains did so.
‘ He replied, with a sigh, yes, madam, but what
‘ would you think of a man whose heart is all the

‘ while bleeding for another woman, to whom he
‘ would willingly sacrifice the world; but, because
‘ he must sacrifice her interest as well as his own,
‘ never durst even give her a hint of that passion
‘ which was preying on his very vitals? do you
‘ believe, Miss Fanny, there is such a wretch on
‘ earth? I answered, with an assumed coldness, I
‘ did not believe there was. He then took me
‘ gently by the hand, and with a look so tender,
‘ that I can not describe it, vowed he was himself
‘ that wretch. Then starting, as if conscious of
‘ an error committed, he cried with a faltering voice,
‘ what am I saying? pardon me, Miss Fanny; since
‘ I beg only your pity, I never will ask for more.—
‘ At these words, hearing my father coming up, I
‘ betrayed myself entirely, if, indeed, I had not
‘ done it before. I hastily withdrew my hand,
‘ crying, hush! for heaven’s sake, my father is just
‘ coming in; my blushes, my look, and my accent
‘ telling him, I suppose, all which he wished to
‘ know.

‘ A few days now brought matters to an eclai-
‘ cissement between us; the being undeceived in
‘ what had given me so much uneasiness, gave me
‘ a pleasure too sweet to be resisted. To triumph
‘ over the widow, for whom I had, in a very short
‘ time, contracted a most inveterate hatred, was a
‘ pride not to be described. Hebberts appeared to
‘ me to be the cause of all this happiness. I doubted
‘ not but that he had the most disinterested passion for
‘ me, and thought him every way worthy of its
‘ return. I did return it, and accepted him as my
‘ lover.

‘ He declared the greatest apprehensions of my
‘ father’s suspicion, though I am convinced these
‘ were causeless, had his designs been honourable.
‘ To blind these, I consented that he should carry
‘ on sham addresses to the widow, who was now
‘ a constant jest between us; and he pretended,
‘ from time to time, to acquaint me faithfully with
‘ every thing that past at his interviews with her;
‘ nor was this faithless woman wanting in her part
‘ of

of the deceit. She carried herself to me all the while with a shew of affection, and pretended to have the utmost friendship for me. But such are the friendships of women!

At this remark, Booth, though enough affected at some parts of the story, had great difficulty to refrain from laughter; but, by good luck, he escaped being perceived; and the lady went on without interruption.

I am come now to a part of my narrative in which it is impossible to be particular, without being tedious; for as to the commerce between lovers, it is, I believe, much the same in all cases, and there is, perhaps, scarce a single phrase that hath not been repeated ten millions of times.

One thing, however, as I strongly remarked it then, so I will repeat it to you now. In all our conversations, in moments when he fell into the warmest raptures, and expressed the greatest uneasiness at the delay of his joys, he seldom mentioned the word marriage; and never once solicited a day for that purpose. Indeed women cannot be cautioned too much against such lovers; for though I have heard, and perhaps truly, of some of our sex of a virtue so exalted, that it is proof against every temptation; yet the generality, I am afraid, are too much in the power of a man to whom they have owned an affection. What is called being upon a good footing, is, perhaps, being upon a very dangerous one; and a woman who hath given her consent to marry, can hardly be said to be safe till she is married.

And now, sir, I hasten to the period of my ruin. We had a wedding in our family; my musical sister was married to a young fellow as musical as herself. Such a match, you may be sure, amongst other festivities, must have a ball. Oh! Mr. Booth, shall modesty forbid me to remark to you what past on that occasion? but why do I mention modesty, who have no pretensions to it? every thing was said, and practised, on that occasion, as if the purpose had been to in-

‘ flame the mind of every woman present. That
‘ effect, I freely own to you, it had with me. Mu-
‘ sic, dancing, wine, and the most luscious conver-
‘ sation, in which my poor dear father innocently
‘ joined, raised ideas in me of which I shall for
‘ ever repent; and I wished (why should I deny
‘ it?) that it had been my wedding, instead of my
‘ sister’s.

‘ The villain Hebbers danced with me that
‘ night, and he lost no opportunity of improving
‘ the occasion. In short, the dreadful evening
‘ came. My father, though it was a very unusual
‘ thing with him, grew intoxicated with liquor; most
‘ of the men were in the same condition; nay, I
‘ myself drank more than I was accustomed to,
‘ enough to inflame, though not to disorder. I lost
‘ my former bed-fellow, my sister, and,—you may,
‘ I think, guess the rest,—the villain found means to
‘ steal to my chamber, and I was undone.

‘ Two months I passed in this detested commerce,
‘ buying, even then, my guilty, half-tasted plea-
‘ sures at too dear a rate, with continual horror and
‘ apprehension; but what have I paid since, what
‘ do I pay now, Mr. Booth? O may my fate be a
‘ warning to every woman to keep her innocence,
‘ to resist every temptation, since she is certain to
‘ repent of the foolish bargain. May it be a warn-
‘ ing to her to deal with mankind with care and
‘ caution; to shun the least approaches of disho-
‘ nour, and never to confide too much in the ho-
‘ nesty of a man, nor in her own strength, where
‘ she has so much at stake; let her remember she
‘ walks on a precipice, and the bottomless pit is to
‘ receive her, if she slips; nay, if she makes but
‘ one false step.

‘ I ask your pardon, Mr. Booth, I might have
‘ spared these exhortations, since no woman hears
‘ me; but you will not wonder at seeing me affected
‘ on this occasion.’

Booth declared he was much more surprised at
her being able so well to preserve her temper in re-
counting her story.

‘ O sir, answered she, I am at length reconciled to my fate; and I can now die with pleasure, since I die revenged. I am not one of those mean wretches who can sit down and lament their misfortunes. If I ever shed tears, they are the tears of indignation—but I will proceed.

‘ It was my fate now to solicit marriage; and I failed not to do it in the most earnest manner. He answered me at first with procrastinations, declaring, from time to time, he would mention it to my father, and still excusing himself for not doing it. At last he thought on an expedient to obtain a longer reprieve. This was by pretending that he should, in a very few weeks, be preferred to the command of a troop; and then, he said, he could, with some confidence, propose the match.

‘ In this delay, I was persuaded to acquiesce; and was indeed pretty easy; for I had not yet the least mistrust of his honour; but what words can paint my sensations! when one morning he came into my room, with all the marks of dejection in his countenance, and throwing an open letter on the table, said, there is news, madam, in that letter, which I am unable to tell you; nor can it give you more concern than it hath given me.

‘ This letter was from his captain, to acquaint him, that the rout, as they call it, was arrived, and that they were to march within two days. And this I am since convinced was what he expected, instead of the preferment which had been made the pretence of delaying our marriage.

‘ The shock which I felt at reading this was inexpressible, occasioned indeed principally by the departure of a villain whom I loved. However, I soon acquired sufficient presence of mind to remember the main point; and I now insisted peremptorily on his making me immediately his wife, whatever might be the consequence.

‘ He seemed thunderstruck at this proposal, being, I suppose, destitute of any excuse: but I was too impatient to wait for an answer, and cried out with

‘ with much eagerness, sure you cannot hesitate a
 ‘ moment upon this matter—hesitate! madam!
 ‘ replied he—what you ask is impossible—is this a
 ‘ time for me to mention a thing of this kind to
 ‘ your father?—my eyes were now opened all at
 ‘ once—I fell into a rage little short of madness.
 ‘ Tell not me, I cried, of impossibilities, nor times,
 ‘ nor of my father,———my honour, my reputa-
 ‘ tion, my all are at stake.—I will have no excuse,
 ‘ no delay—make me your wife this instant, or I
 ‘ will proclaim you over the face of the whole earth
 ‘ for the greatest of villains.—He answered, with
 ‘ a kind of sneer, What will you proclaim, madam?—
 ‘ whose honour will you injure? my tongue faltered
 ‘ when I offered to reply, and I fell into a violent
 ‘ agony, which ended in a fit; nor do I remember
 ‘ any thing more that past, till I found myself in the
 ‘ arms of my poor affrighted father.

‘ O Mr. Booth! what was then my situation.
 ‘ I tremble even now from the reflection.—I must
 ‘ stop a moment. I can go no farther.’ Booth at-
 ‘ tempted all in his power to sooth her; and she
 ‘ soon recovered her powers, and proceeded in her
 ‘ story.

C H A P. IX.

In which Miss Matthews concludes her relation.

‘ **B**EFORE I had recovered my senses, I had
 ‘ sufficiently betrayed myself to the best of
 ‘ men, who instead of upbraiding me, or exerting
 ‘ any anger, endeavoured to comfort me all he
 ‘ could, with assurances that all should yet be well.
 ‘ This goodness of his affected me with inexpress-
 ‘ sible sensations; I prostrated myself before him,
 ‘ embraced and kissed his knees, and almost dis-
 ‘ solved in tears, and a degree of tenderness hardly
 ‘ to be conceived——But I am running into too
 ‘ minute descriptions.

‘ Hebbers seeing me in a fit, had left me, and
 ‘ sent one of the servants to take care of me. He
 ‘ then ran away like a thief from the house, with-

out

‘ out taking his leave of my father, or once thank-
‘ ing him for all his civilities. He did not stop at
‘ his quarters, but made directly to London, appre-
‘ hensive, I believe, either of my father or brother’s
‘ resentment; for I am convinced he is a coward.
‘ Indeed his fear of my brother was utterly ground-
‘ less; for I believe he would rather have thanked
‘ any man who had destroyed me; and I am sure I
‘ am not in the least behind hand with him in good
‘ wishes.

‘ All his inveteracy to me had, however, no ef-
‘ fect on my father, at least at that time; for
‘ though the good man took sufficient occasions to
‘ reprimand me for my past offence, he could not
‘ be brought to abandon me. A treaty of mar-
‘ riage was now set on foot, in which my father
‘ himself offered me to Hebbers, with a fortune
‘ superior to that which had been given with my
‘ sister; nor could all my brother’s remonstrances
‘ against it, as an act of the highest injustice, avail.

‘ Hebbers entered into the treaty, though not
‘ with much warmth. He had even the assurance
‘ to make additional demands on my father, which
‘ being complied with, every thing was concluded,
‘ and the villain once more received into the house.
‘ He soon found means to obtain my forgiveness
‘ of his former behaviour; indeed he convinced
‘ me, so foolishly blind is female love, that he had
‘ never been to blame.

‘ When every thing was ready for our nuptials,
‘ and the day of the ceremony was to be appointed,
‘ in the midst of my happiness, I received a letter
‘ from an unknown hand, acquainting me (guess,
‘ Mr. Booth, how I was shocked at receiving it)
‘ that Mr. Hebbers was already married to a woman,
‘ in a distant part of the kingdom.

‘ I will not tire you with all that past at our next
‘ interview. I communicated the letter to Heb-
‘ bers, who, after some little hesitation, owned the
‘ fact; and not only owned it, but had the address
‘ to improve it to his own advantage, to make it
‘ the means of satisfying me concerning all his for-
‘ mer

‘mer delays; which, to say the truth, I was not
‘so much displeased at imputing to any degree of
‘villainy, as I should have been to impute it to the
‘want of a sufficient warmth of affection; and
‘though the disappointment of all my hopes, at
‘the very instant of their expected fruition, threw
‘me into the most violent disorders; yet when I
‘came a little to myself, he had no great difficulty
‘to persuade me that in every instance, with regard
‘to me, Hebbers had acted from no other motive
‘than from the most ardent and ungovernable love.
‘And there is, I believe, no crime which a woman
‘will not forgive, when she can derive it from that
‘fountain. In short, I forgave him all, and am
‘willing to persuade myself I am not weaker than
‘the rest of my sex. Indeed, Mr. Booth, he hath
‘a bewitching tongue, and is master of an address
‘that no woman could resist. I do assure you the
‘charms of his person are his least perfection, at
‘least in my eye.’

Here Booth smiled, but happily without her perceiving it.

‘A fresh difficulty (continued she) now arose.
‘This was to excuse the delay of the ceremony to
‘my father, who every day very earnestly urged it.
‘This made me so very uneasy, that I at last listened
‘to a proposal, which if any one, in the days of
‘my innocence, or even a few days before, had
‘assured me I could have submitted to have thought
‘of, I should have treated the supposition with the
‘highest contempt and indignation; nay, I scarce
‘reflect on it now with more horror than astonishment.
‘In short, I agreed to run away with him. To
‘leave my father, my reputation, every thing which
‘was or ought to have been dear to me, and to
‘live with this villain as a mistress, since I could not
‘be his wife.

‘Was not this an obligation of the highest and
‘tenderest kind, and had I not reason to expect
‘every return in the man’s power on whom I had
‘conferred it.

‘ I will make short of the remainder of my story :
‘ for what is there of a woman worth relating, after
‘ what I have told you ?

‘ Above a year I lived with this man in an obscure
‘ court in London, during which time I had a child
‘ by him, whom Heaven, I thank it, hath been pleased
‘ to take to itself.

‘ During many months he behaved to me with
‘ all the apparent tenderness, and even fondness im-
‘ aginable ; but alas ! how poor was my enjoyment
‘ of this, compared to what it would have been in
‘ another situation ? when he was present, life was
‘ barely tolerable ; but when he was absent, nothing
‘ could equal the misery I endured. I pass my
‘ hours almost entirely alone : for no company, but
‘ what I despised, would comfort with me. Abroad,
‘ I scarce ever went, lest I should meet any of my
‘ former acquaintance ; for their sight would have
‘ plunged a thousand daggers in my soul. My
‘ only diversion was going very seldom to a play,
‘ where I hid myself in the gallery, with a daughter
‘ of the woman of the house. A girl indeed of good
‘ sense, and many good qualities : but how much
‘ beneath me was it to be the companion of a creature
‘ so low ! O heavens ! when have I seen my equals
‘ glittering in a side-box, how have the thoughts of
‘ my lost honour torn my soul !’

‘ Pardon me, dear madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ for in-
‘ terrupting you ; but I am under the utmost anxiety
‘ to know what became of your poor father, for
‘ whom I have so great a respect, and who, I am
‘ convinced, must so bitterly feel your loss.’

‘ O Mr. Booth,’ answered she, ‘ he was scarce
‘ ever out of my thoughts. His dear image still ob-
‘ truded itself in my mind, and I believe would
‘ have broken my heart, had I not taken a very
‘ preposterous way to ease myself. I am indeed al-
‘ most ashamed to tell you ; but necessity put it in
‘ my head.—You will think the matter too trifling
‘ to have been remembered, and so it surely was ;
‘ nor should I have remembered it on any other oc-
‘ casion. You must know then, sir, that my bro-
‘ ther

‘ ther was always my inveterate enemy, and alto-
‘ gether as fond of my sister. He once prevailed
‘ with my father to let him take my sister with him
‘ in the chariot, and by that means I was disap-
‘ pointed of going to a ball which I had set my
‘ heart on. The disappointment, I assure you, was
‘ great at the time; but I had long since forgotten
‘ it. I must have been a very bad woman, if I
‘ had not: for it was the only thing in which I can
‘ remember that my father ever disobliged me.
‘ However, I now revived this in my mind, which
‘ I artificially worked up into so high an injury, that
‘ I assure you it afforded me no little comfort.
‘ When any tender idea intruded into my bosom,
‘ I immediately raised this phantom of an injury in
‘ my imagination, and it considerably lessened the
‘ fury of that sorrow which I should have other-
‘ wise felt for the loss of so good a father; who
‘ died within a few months of my departure from
‘ him.

‘ And now, sir, to draw to a conclusion. One
‘ night as I was in the gallery at Drury-Lane play-
‘ house, I saw below me, in a side-box——(she
‘ was once below me in every place) that widow
‘ whom I mentioned to you before——I had scarce
‘ cast my eyes on this woman, before I was so
‘ shocked with the sight, that it almost deprived
‘ me of my senses; for the villain Hebbers came
‘ presently in, and seated himself behind her.

‘ He had been almost a month from me, and I
‘ believed him to be at his quarters in Yorkshire.
‘ Guess what were my sensations, when I beheld
‘ him sitting by that base woman, and talking to
‘ her with the utmost familiarity. I could not long
‘ endure this sight; and having acquainted my
‘ companion that I was taken suddenly ill, I forced
‘ her to go home with me at the end of the second
‘ act.

‘ After a restless and sleepless night, when I rose
‘ the next morning I had the comfort to receive a
‘ visit from the woman of the house, who, after a
‘ very short introduction, asked me when I had
‘ heard

‘ heard from the captain, and when I expected to
‘ see him? I had not strength or spirits to make
‘ her any answer; and she proceeded thus: indeed
‘ I did not think the captain would have used me
‘ so. My husband was an officer of the army, as
‘ well as himself; and if a body is a little low in
‘ the world, I am sure that is no reason for folks to
‘ trample on a body. I defy the world to say as I
‘ ever was guilty of an ill thing. For heaven’s
‘ sake, madam, says I, what do you mean! mean!
‘ cries she, I am sure if I had not thought you had
‘ been captain Hebbert’s lady, his lawful lady too,
‘ you should never have set footing in my house.
‘ I would have captain Hebberts know, that though
‘ I am reduced to let lodgings, I never have en-
‘ tertained any but persons of character.—In this
‘ manner, sir, she ran on, saying many shocking
‘ things not worth repeating, till my anger at last
‘ got the better of my patience as well as my sorrow,
‘ and I pushed her out of the room.

‘ She had not been long gone before her daugh-
‘ ter came to me, and after many expressions of
‘ tenderness and pity acquainted me, that her mo-
‘ ther had just found out, by means of the captain’s
‘ servant, that the captain was married to another
‘ lady; which if you did not know before, madam,
‘ said she, I am sorry to be the messenger of such
‘ ill news.

‘ Think, Mr. Booth, what I must have endured
‘ to see myself humbled before such a creature as
‘ this, the daughter of a woman who lets lodg-
‘ ings! however, having recollected myself a little,
‘ I thought it would be in vain to deny any thing;
‘ so knowing this to be one of the best natured,
‘ and most sensible girls in the world, I resolved to
‘ tell her my whole story, and for the future to
‘ make her my confidante. I answered her, there-
‘ fore, with a good deal of assurance, that she need
‘ not regret telling me this piece of ill news, for I
‘ had known it before I came to her house.

‘ Pardon me, madam, replied the girl, you can-
‘ not possibly have known it so long; for he hath
‘ not

‘ not been married above a week : last night was the
‘ first time of his appearing in public with his wife
‘ at the play. Indeed, I knew very well the cause
‘ of your uneasiness there ; but would not mention—

‘ His wife at the play ! answered I eagerly : what
‘ wife ! whom do you mean ?’

‘ I mean the widow Carey, madam, replied she,
‘ to whom the captain was married a few days since.
‘ His servant was here last night to pay for your
‘ lodging ; and he told it my mother.

‘ I know not what answer I made, or whether I
‘ made any ; I presently fell dead on the floor, and
‘ it was with great difficulty I was brought back to
‘ life by the poor girl : for neither the mother, nor
‘ the maid of the house, would lend me any assistance,
‘ both seeming to regard me rather as a monster than
‘ a woman.

‘ Scarce had I recovered the use of my senses, when
‘ I received a letter from the villain, declaring he
‘ had not assurance to see my face, and very kindly
‘ advising me to endeavour to reconcile myself to my
‘ family ; concluding with an offer, in case I did not
‘ succeed, to allow me twenty pounds a year to sup-
‘ port me in some remote part of the kingdom.

‘ I need not mention my indignation at these pro-
‘ posals. In the highest agony of rage, I went in
‘ a chair to the detested house, where I easily got
‘ access to the wretch I had devoted to destruction,
‘ whom I no sooner found within my reach, than I
‘ plunged a drawn penknife, which I had prepared
‘ in my pocket for the purpose, into his accursed
‘ heart. For this fact I was immediately seized, and
‘ soon after committed hither ; and for this fact I am
‘ ready to die, and shall, with pleasure, receive the
‘ sentence of the law.

‘ Thus, sir,’ said she, ‘ I have related to you my
‘ unhappy story ; and if I have tired your patience,
‘ by dwelling too long on those parts which affected
‘ me the most, I ask your pardon.’

Booth made a proper speech on this occasion,
and having expressed much concern at her present
situa-

situation, concluded that he hoped her sentence would be milder than she seemed to expect.

Her reply to this was full of so much bitterness and indignation, that we do not think proper to record the speech at length; in which, having vented her passion, she all at once put on a serene countenance, and, with an air of great complacency, said, 'Well, Mr. Booth, I think I have now a right to satisfy my curiosity, at the expence of your breath. I may say it is not altogether a vain curiosity; for perhaps I have had inclination enough to interest myself in whatever concerns you?—but no matter for that---those days (added she with a sigh) are now over.'

Booth, who was extremely good-natured and well bred, told her that she should not command him twice whatever was in his power; and then, after the usual apology, was going to begin his history, when the keeper arrived and acquainted the lady that dinner was ready, at the same time saying, 'I suppose, madam, as the gentleman is an acquaintance of yours, he must dine with us too.'

Miss Matthews told the keeper that she had only one word to mention in private to the gentleman, and that then they would both attend him.—She then pulled her purse from her pocket, in which were upwards of twenty guineas, being the remainder of the money for which she had sold a gold repeating watch, her father's present, with some other trinkets, and desired Mr. Booth to take what he should have occasion for;—saying, 'You know, I believe, dear Will, I never valued money; and now I am sure I shall have very little use for it.' Booth, with much difficulty, accepted of two guineas; and then they both together attended the keeper.

CHAP. X.

Table talk consisting of a facetious discourse that passed in the prison.

THERE were assembled at the table the governor of these (not improperly called infernal) regions; the lieutenant governor, vulgarly named the first turnkey; Miss Matthews, Mr. Booth, Mr. Robinson the gambler, several other prisoners of both sexes, and one Murphy an attorney.

The governor took the first opportunity to bring the affair of Miss Matthews upon the carpet, and then turning to Murphy, he said, ‘it is very lucky
‘ this gentleman happens to be present; I do assure
‘ you, madam, your cause cannot be in abler hands.
‘ He is, I believe, the best man in England at a defence; I have known him often succeed against the
‘ most positive evidence.’

‘Fy, fir,’ answered Murphy, ‘you know I hate
‘ all this; but if the lady will trust me with her
‘ cause, I will do the best in my power. Come, madam, do not be discouraged; a bit of manslaughter and cold iron, I hope, will be the worst: or
‘ perhaps we may come off better, with a slice of
‘ chance-medley, or *se defendendo*.’

‘I am very ignorant of the law, fir,’ cries the lady.

‘Yes, madam,’ answered Murphy, ‘it cannot
‘ be expected you should understand it. There are
‘ very few of us who profess it, that understand the
‘ whole;—nor is it necessary we should. There is a
‘ great deal of rubbish of little use about indictments
‘ and abatements, and bars, and ejectments, and
‘ trovers, and such stuff, with which people cram
‘ their heads to little purpose. The chapter of evidence is the main business; that is the sheet-anchor:
‘ that is the rudder, which brings the vessel safe in
‘ Portum. Evidence is indeed the whole, the *summa*
‘ *totidis*, for *de non apparentibus et non insistentibus eandem est ratio*.’

‘If

‘ If you address yourself to me, sir,’ said the lady, ‘ you are much too learned, I assure you, for my understanding.’

‘ *Tace*, madam,’ answered Murphy, ‘ is Latin for a candle : I commend your prudence. I shall know the particulars of your case when we are alone.’

‘ I hope the lady,’ said Robinson, ‘ hath no suspicion of any person here. I hope we are all persons of honour at this table.’

‘ D—n my eyes !’ answered a well-dressed woman, ‘ I can answer for myself and the other ladies ; though I never saw the lady in my life, she need not be shy of us, d—n my eyes ! I scorn to rap* against any lady.’

‘ D—n me, madam !’ cried another female, ‘ I honour what you have done. I once put a knife into a cull myself—so my service to you, madam ; and I wish you may come off with *se diffidendo* with all my heart.’

‘ I beg, good woman,’ said Miss Matthews, ‘ you would talk on some other subject, and give yourself no concern about my affairs.’

‘ You see ladies,’ cried Murphy, ‘ the gentleman doth not care to talk on this matter before company ; so pray do not press her.’

‘ Nay, I value the lady’s acquaintance no more than she values mine,’ cries the first woman who spoke——‘ I have kept as good company as the lady, I believe, every day in the week. Good woman ! I do not use to be so treated—If the lady says such another word to me, d—n me, I will darken her day-lights. Marry come up, good woman !—the lady’s a whore as well as myself ; and though I am sent hither to mill doll, d—n my eyes, I have money enough to buy it off as well as the lady herself.’

Action might perhaps soon have ensued this speech, had not the keeper interposed his authority, and put an end to any further dispute. Soon after which, the company broke up ; and none but himself,

* A cant word, meaning to swear, or rather to perjure yourself.

self, Mr. Murphy, Captain Booth, and Miss Matthews remained together.

Miss Matthews then, at the entreaty of the keeper, began to open her case to Mr. Murphy, whom she admitted to be her solicitor, though she still declared she was indifferent as to the event of the trial.

Mr. Murphy having heard all the particulars with which the reader is already acquainted (as far as related to the murder) shook his head, and said, 'there is but one circumstance, madam, which I wish was out of the case; and that we must put out of it: I mean the carrying the penknife drawn into the room with you; for that seems to imply malice prepense, as we call it in the law: this circumstance therefore must not appear against you; and if the servant who was in the room observed this, he must be bought off at all hazards. All here, you say, are friends; therefore I tell you openly, you must furnish me with money sufficient for this purpose. Malice is all we have to guard against.'

'I would not presume, sir,' cries Booth, 'to inform you in the Law; but I have heard in case of stabbing, a man may be indicted upon the statute; and it is capital, though no malice appears.'

'You say true, sir, answered Murphy, a man may be indicted *contra formam statuti*; and that method, I allow you, requires no malice; I presume you are a lawyer, sir?'

'No, indeed, sir, answered Booth, 'I know nothing of the law.'

'Then, sir, I will tell you—If a man be indicted *contra formam statuti*, as we say, no malice is necessary; because the form of the statute makes malice; and then what we have to guard against is having struck the first blow—pox on't, it is unlucky this was done in a room—If it had been in the street, we could have had five or six witnesses to have proved the first blow, cheaper, than I am afraid we shall get this one; for when a man knows, from the unhappy circumstances of the case, that you
' can

‘ can procure no other witnesses but himself, he is always dear. It is so in all other ways of business —I am very implicit, you see; but we are all among friends. The safest way is to furnish me with money enough to offer him a good round sum at once; and, I think, (it is for your good I speak) fifty pounds is the least that can be offered him.— I do assure you, I would offer him no less, was it my own case.

‘ And do you think, sir,’ said she, ‘ that I would save my life at the expence of hiring another to perjure himself?’

‘ Ay, surely do I,’ cries Murphy, ‘ for where is the fault, admitting there is some fault in perjury, as you call it; and to be sure, it is such a matter, as every man would rather wish to avoid than not; and yet, as it may be managed, there is not so much as some people are apt to imagine in it; for he need not kiss the book, and then pray where is the perjury? but if the crier is sharper than ordinary, what is it he kisses? is it any thing but a bit of calves-skin? I am sure a man must be a very bad christian himself, who would not do so much as that to save the life of any christian whatever, much more of so pretty a lady---Indeed, madam, if we can make out but a tolerable case, so much beauty will go a great way with the judge and the jury too.’

The latter part of this speech, notwithstanding the mouth it came from, caused Miss Matthews to suppress much of the indignation which began to arise at the former; and she answered with a smile, ‘ Sir, you are a great casuist in these matters; but we need argue no longer concerning them; for if fifty pounds would save my life, I assure you I could not command that sum. The little money I have in my pocket is all I can call my own; and, I apprehend, in the situation I am in, I shall have very little of that to spare.’

‘ Come, come, madam,’ cries Murphy, ‘ life is sweet, let me tell you, and never sweeter than when we are near losing it. I have known many a

‘ man very brave and undaunted at his first commit-
‘ ment, who, when business began to thicken a little
‘ upon him, hath changed his note.---It is no time to
‘ be saving in your condition.’

The keeper, who, after the liberality of Miss Matthews, and on seeing a purse of guineas in her hand, had conceived a great opinion of her wealth, no sooner heard that the sum which he had in intention entirely confiscated for his own use, was attempted to be broke in upon, thought it high time to be upon his guard. ‘ To be sure,’ cries he, Mr. Murphy, life is sweet, ‘ as you say, that must be acknowledged ; to be sure ‘ life is sweet ; but sweet as it is, no persons can advance more than they are worth to save it. And ‘ indeed, if the lady can command no more money ‘ than that little she mentions, she is to be commended for her unwillingness to part with any of it ; ‘ for, to be sure, as she says, she will want every far- ‘ thing of that, to live like a gentlewoman till she ‘ comes to her trial. And, to be sure, as sweet as ‘ life is, people ought to take care to be able to live ‘ sweetly while they do live : besides, I cannot help ‘ saying, the lady shews herself to be what she is, by ‘ her abhorrence of perjury, which is certainly a very ‘ dreadful crime. And, though the not kissing the ‘ book, doth, as you say, make a great deal of difference ; and, if a man had a great while to live ‘ and repent, perhaps he might swallow it well ‘ enough ; yet, when people comes to be near their ‘ end, (as who can venture to foretell what will be ‘ the lady’s case !) they ought to take care not to ‘ over-burthen their conscience. I hope the lady’s ‘ case will not be found murder ; for I am sure I ‘ always wish well to all my prisoners, who shew ‘ themselves to be gentlemen, or gentlewomen ; yet ‘ one should always fear the worst.’

‘ Indeed, sir, you speak like an oracle,’ answered the lady ; ‘ and one subornation of perjury ‘ would sit heavier on my conscience, than twenty ‘ such murders as I am guilty of.’

‘ Nay, to be sure, madam,’ answered the keeper, ‘ nobody can pretend to tell what provocation you ‘ must

‘ must have had ; and certainly, it can never be imagined, that a lady who behaves herself so handsomely as you have done ever since you have been under my keys, should be guilty of killing a man without being very highly provoked to do it.’

Mr. Murphy was, I believe, going to answer, when he was called out of the room ; after which, nothing passed between the remaining persons worth relating, till Booth and the lady retired back again into the lady’s apartment.

Here they fell immediately to commenting on the foregoing discourse ; but as their comments were, I believe, the same with what most readers have made on the same occasion, we shall omit them. At last Miss Matthews reminding her companion of his promise of relating to her what had befallen him since the interruption of their former acquaintance, he began, as is written in the next book of this history.

A M E L I A.

B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

In which Captain Booth begins to relate his history.

THE tea-table being removed, and Mr. Booth and the lady left alone, he proceeded as follows :

‘ Since you desire, madam, to know the particulars of my courtship to that best and dearest of women, whom I afterwards married ; I will endeavour to recollect them as well as I can, at least all those incidents which are most worth relating to you.

‘ If the vulgar opinion of the fatality in marriage had ever any foundation, it surely appeared in my marriage with my Amelia. I knew her in the first dawn of her beauty ; and, I believe, madam, she had as much as ever fell to the share of a woman ; but though I always admired her, it was long without any spark of love. Perhaps the general admiration which at that time pursued her, the respect paid her by persons of the highest rank, and the numberless addresses which were made her by men of great fortune, prevented my aspiring at the possession of those charms, which seemed so absolutely out of my reach. However it was, I assure you, the accident which deprived her of the admiration of others, made the first great impression on my heart in her favour. The injury done to her beauty by the overturning of a chaise, by which,

‘ as

‘ as you may well remember, her lovely nose was
‘ beat all to pieces, gave me an assurance that the
‘ woman who had been so much adored for the
‘ charms of her person, deserved a much higher
‘ adoration to be paid to her mind; for that she
‘ was in the latter respect infinitely more superior to
‘ the rest of her sex, than she had ever been in the
‘ former.

‘ I admire your taste extremely,’ cried the lady. ‘ I
‘ remember perfectly well the great heroism with
‘ which your Amelia bore that misfortune.’

‘ Good heavens! madam,’ answered he, ‘ what a
‘ magnanimity of mind did her behaviour demon-
‘ strate! if the world have extolled the firmness of
‘ soul in a man who can support the loss of fortune;
‘ of a general, who can be composed after the loss of
‘ a victory; or of a king, who can be contented
‘ with the loss of a crown; with what astonishment
‘ ought we to behold, with what praises to honour a
‘ young lady, who can, with patience and resignation,
‘ submit to the loss of exquisite beauty, in other
‘ words, to the loss of fortune, power, glory; every
‘ thing which human nature is apt to court and re-
‘ joice in! what must be the mind, which can bear to
‘ be deprived of all these in a moment, and by an
‘ unfortunate trifling accident; which could support
‘ all this, together with the most exquisite torments of
‘ body, and with dignity, with resignation, without
‘ complaining, almost without a tear, undergo the
‘ most painful and dreadful operations of surgery in
‘ such a situation.’ Here he stopt, and a torrent of
‘ tears gushed from his eyes; such tears as are apt to
‘ flow from a truly noble heart, at the hearing of any
‘ thing surprisngly great and glorious. As soon as
‘ he was able he again proceeded thus:

‘ Would you think, Miss Matthews, that the mis-
‘ fortune of my Amelia was capable of any aggra-
‘ vation! I assure you, she hath often told me it was
‘ aggravated with a circumstance which outweighed
‘ all the other ingredients. This was the cruel insults
‘ she received from some of her most intimate ac-
‘ quaintance, several of whom, after many distor-

‘ tions and grimaces, have turned their heads aside,
‘ unable to support their secret triumph, and burst
‘ into a loud laugh in her hearing.’

‘ Good heaven !’ cried Miss Matthews, ‘ what detestable actions will this contemptible passion of
‘ envy prevail on our sex to commit ?’

‘ An occasion of this kind, as she hath since told
‘ me, made the first impression on her gentle heart in
‘ my favour. I was one day in company with several
‘ young ladies, or rather young devils, where poor
‘ Amelia’s accident was the subject of much mirth
‘ and pleasantry. One of these said, she hoped Miss
‘ would not hold her head so high for the future.
‘ Another answered, I do not know, madam, what
‘ she may do with her head, but I am convinced she
‘ will never more turn up her nose at her betters.
‘ Another cried, what a very proper match might
‘ now be made between Amelia and a certain captain,
‘ who had unfortunately received an injury in
‘ the same part, though from no shameful cause.
‘ Many other sarcasms were thrown out, very unworthy to be repeated. I was hurt with perceiving so
‘ much malice in human shape, and cried out very
‘ bluntly, indeed, ladies, you need not express such
‘ satisfaction at poor Miss Emily’s accident : for she
‘ will still be the handsomest woman in England.
‘ This speech of mine was afterwards variously repeated by some to my honour, and by others represented in a contrary light ; indeed it was often reported to be much ruder than it was. However, it
‘ at length reached Amelia’s ears. She said she was
‘ very much obliged to me ; since I could have so
‘ much compassion for her as to be rude to a lady on
‘ her account.

‘ About a month after the accident, when Amelia
‘ began to see company, in a mask, I had the honour
‘ to drink tea with her. We were alone together,
‘ and I begged her to indulge my curiosity by shewing me her face. She answered in a most obliging
‘ manner, “ perhaps, Mr. Booth, you will as little
‘ know me when my mask is off, as when it is on ;
‘ and at the same instant unmasked.”—The surgeon’s
‘ skill

‘ skill was the least I considered. A thousand tender
‘ ideas rushed all at once on my mind. I was unable
‘ to contain myself, and eagerly kissing her hand, I
‘ cried—Upon my soul, madam, you never appeared
‘ to me so lovely as at this instant. Nothing more re-
‘ markable passed at this visit ; but I sincerely believe
‘ we were neither of us hereafter indifferent to each
‘ other.

‘ Many months, however, passed after this, before
‘ I ever thought seriously of making her my wife.
‘ Not that I wanted sufficient love for Amelia. Indeed
‘ it arose from the vast affection I bore her. I con-
‘ sidered my own as a desperate fortune, hers as en-
‘ tirely dependant on her mother, who was a woman,
‘ you know, of violent passions, and very unlikely
‘ to consent to a match so highly contrary to the in-
‘ terest of her daughter. The more I loved Amelia,
‘ the more firmly I resolved within myself never to
‘ propose love to her seriously. Such a dupe was my
‘ understanding to my heart ; and so foolishly did I
‘ imagine I could be master of a flame to which I
‘ was every day adding fuel.

‘ O Miss Matthews ! we have heard of men en-
‘ tirely masters of their passions, and of hearts which
‘ can carry this fire in them, and conceal it at their
‘ pleasure. Perhaps there may be such ; but if
‘ there are, those hearts may be compared, I be-
‘ lieve, to damps, in which it is more difficult to
‘ keep fire alive than to prevent its blazing : in
‘ mine, it was placed in the midst of combustible
‘ matter.

‘ After several visits, in which looks and sighs
‘ had been interchanged on both sides, but without
‘ the least mention of passion in private, one day
‘ the discourse between us, when alone, happened
‘ to turn on love ; I say happened, for I protest it was
‘ not designed on my side, and I am as firmly con-
‘ vinced not on hers. I was now no longer master of
‘ myself ; I declared myself the most wretched of all
‘ martyrs to this tender passion ; that I had long con-
‘ cealed it from its object. At length, after men-
‘ tioning many particulars, suppressing however,

‘ those which must have necessarily brought it home
 ‘ to Amelia, I concluded with begging her to be the
 ‘ confidante of my amour, and to give me her ad-
 ‘ vice on that occasion.

‘ Amelia, (O I shall never forget the dear pertur-
 ‘ bation !) appeared all confusion at this instant. She
 ‘ trembled, turned pale, and discovered how well she
 ‘ understood me, by a thousand more symptoms than
 ‘ I could take notice of, in a state of mind so very
 ‘ little different from her own. At last, with falter-
 ‘ ing accents, she said, I had made a very ill choice
 ‘ of a counsellor, in a matter in which she was so ig-
 ‘ norant.—Adding, at last, I believe, Mr. Booth,
 ‘ you gentlemen want very little advice in these af-
 ‘ fairs, which you all understand better than we do.

‘ I will relate no more of our conversation at pre-
 ‘ sent ; indeed I am afraid I tire you with too many
 ‘ particulars.’

‘ O no,’ answered she, ‘ I should be glad to hear
 ‘ every step of an amour which had so tender a be-
 ‘ ginning. Tell me every thing you said or did, if
 ‘ you can remember it.’

He then proceeded, and so will we in the next
 chapter.

C H A P. II.

*Mr. Booth continues his story. In this chapter there are
 some passages that may serve as a kind of touchstone,
 by which a young lady may examine the heart of her
 lover. I would advise, therefore, that every lover be
 obliged to read it over in the presence of his mistress,
 and that she carefully watch his emotions while he is
 reading.*

‘ **I** WAS under the utmost concern,’ cries Booth,
 ‘ when I retired from my visit, and had reflected
 ‘ coolly on what I had said. I now saw plainly that
 ‘ I had made downright love to Amelia ; and I feared,
 ‘ such was my vanity, that I had already gone too
 ‘ far, and been too successful. Feared ! do I say,
 ‘ could I fear what I hoped ? how shall I describe the
 ‘ anxiety of my mind !

‘ You

‘ You need give yourself no great pain,’ cried Miss Matthews, ‘ to describe what I can so easily guess. ‘ To be honest with you, Mr. Booth, I do not agree with your lady’s opinion, that the men have a superior understanding in the matters of love. Men are often blind to the passions of women ; but every woman is as quick-sighted as a hawk on these occasions ; nor is there one article in the whole science which is not understood by all our sex.

‘ However, madam,’ said Mr. Booth, ‘ I now undertook to deceive Amelia. I abstained three days from seeing her ; to say the truth, I endeavoured to work myself up to a resolution of leaving her for ever ; but when I could not so far subdue my passion——But why do I talk nonsense, of subduing passion ? I should say, when no other passion could surmount my love, I returned to visit her, and now I attempted the strangest project which ever entered into the silly head of a lover. This was to persuade Amelia that I was really in love in another place, and had literally expressed my meaning, when I asked her advice, and desired her to be my confidante.

‘ I therefore forged a meeting to have been between me and my imaginary mistress, since I had last seen Amelia, and related the particulars as well as I could invent them, which had past at our conversation.

‘ Poor Amelia presently swallowed this bait ; and, as she hath told me since, absolutely believed me to be in earnest. Poor dear love ! how should the sincerest of hearts have any idea of deceit ? for with all her simplicity, I assure you she is the most sensible woman in the world.’

‘ It is highly generous and good in you,’ (said Miss Matthews, with a sly sneer) ‘ to impute to honesty what others would perhaps call credulity.’

‘ I protest, madam,’ answered he, ‘ I do her no more than justice. A good heart will at all times betray the best head in the world.——Well, madam, my angel was now, if possible, more confused than before. She looked so silly, you can hardly believe it.—

‘ Yes, yes, I can,’ answered the lady, with a laugh, ‘ I can believe it.—Well, well, go on.’ ‘ After some hesitation,’ cried he, ‘ my Amelia said faintly to me, “ Mr. Booth, you use me very ill; you desire me to be your confidante, and conceal from me the name of your mistress.” ’

‘ Is it possible then, madam, answered I, that you cannot guess her, when I tell you she is one of your acquaintance, and lives in this town ?’

“ My acquaintance,” said she, “ La ! Mr. Booth. —In this town. I—I—I thought I could have guessed for once ; but I have an ill talent that way—I will never attempt to guess any thing again.” ‘ Indeed I do her an injury when I pretend to represent her manner. Her manner, look, voice, every thing was inimitable ; such sweetness, softness, innocence, modesty.—Upon my soul, if ever man could boast of his resolution, I think I might now, that I abstained from falling prostrate at her feet, and adoring her. However, I triumphed ; pride, I believe, triumphed, or perhaps love got the better of love. We once more parted, and I promised the next time I saw her, to reveal the name of my mistress.’

‘ I now had, I thought, gained a complete victory over myself ; and no small compliments did I pay to my own resolution. In short, I triumphed as cowards and niggards do when they flatter themselves with having given some supposed instance of courage or generosity ; and my triumph lasted as long ; that is to say, till my ascendent passion had a proper opportunity of displaying itself in its true and natural colours.’

‘ Having hitherto succeeded so well in my own opinion, and obtained this mighty self-conquest, I now entertained a design of exerting the most romantic generosity, and of curing that unhappy passion which I perceived I had raised in Amelia.’

‘ Among the ladies who had expressed the greatest satisfaction at my Amelia’s misfortune, Miss Osborne had distinguished herself in a very eminent degree ; she was indeed the next in beauty to my
angel,

‘ angel, nay, she had disputed the preference, and
‘ had some among her admirers, who were blind
‘ enough to give it in her favour.’

‘ Well,’ cries the lady, ‘ I will allow you to call
‘ them blind ; but Miss Osborne was a charming
‘ girl.’

‘ She certainly was handsome,’ answered he, and
‘ a very considerable fortune ; so I thought my Amelia
‘ would have little difficulty in believing me, when I
‘ fixed on her as my mistress. And I concluded, that
‘ my thus placing my affections on her known enemy,
‘ would be the surest method of eradicating every
‘ tender idea with which I had been ever honoured
‘ by Amelia.

‘ Well then, to Amelia I went ; she received me
‘ with more than usual coldness and reserve. In
‘ which, to confess the truth, there appeared to me
‘ more of anger than indifference, and more of
‘ dejection than of either. After some short intro-
‘ duction, I revived the discourse of my amour,
‘ and presently mentioned Miss Osborne as the lady
‘ whose name I had concealed ; adding, that the
‘ true reason why I did not mention her before,
‘ was, that I apprehended there was some little dis-
‘ tance between them, which I hoped to have the
‘ happiness of accommodating.

‘ Amelia answered with much gravity.’ “ If you
“ know, sir, that there is any distance between us,
“ I suppose you know the reason of that distance ;
“ and then, I think, I could not have expected to be
“ affronted by her name. I would not have you
“ think, Mr. Booth, that I hate Miss Osborne.
“ No ! Heaven is my witness, I despise her too
“ much.—Indeed, when I reflect how much I loved
“ the woman who hath treated me so cruelly, I own
“ it gives me pain.—When I lay, as I then imagined,
“ and as all about me believed, upon my death-bed,
“ in all the agonies of pain and misery, to become
“ the object of laughter to my dearest friend.—O
“ Mr. Booth, it is a cruel reflexion ! and could I
“ after this have expected from you :—but why,
‘ not from you, to whom I am a person entirely in-

‘ different, if such a friend could treat me so barbarously?’

‘ During the greatest part of this speech, the tears streamed from her bright eyes, I could endure it no longer. I caught up the word indifferent, and repeated it, saying, do you think then, madam, that Miss Emily is indifferent to me?’

“ Yes surely, I do,” answered she, “ I know I am; indeed, why should I not be indifferent to you?”

‘ Have my eyes,’ said I, ‘ then, declared nothing?’

“ O there is no need of your eyes,” answered she. “ Your tongue hath declared that you have singled out of all womankind my greatest, I will say, my basest enemy.—I own I once thought that character would have been no recommendation to you—But why did I think so? I was born to deceive myself.”

‘ I then fell on my knees before her; and forcing her hand, cried out, O my Amelia, I can bear no longer. You are the only mistress of my affections; you are the deity I adore. In this style, I ran on for above two or three minutes, what it is impossible to repeat, till a torrent of contending passions, together with the surprise, overpowered her gentle spirits, and she fainted away in my arms.

‘ To describe my sensation till she returned to herself, is not in my power.’—You need not,” cried Miss Matthews.—‘ Oh; happy Amelia! why, had I not been blest with such a passion?’—‘ I am convinced, madam,’ continued he, ‘ you cannot expect all the particulars of the tender scene which ensued. I was not enough in my senses to remember it all. Let it suffice to say, that That behaviour with which Amelia, while ignorant of its motive, had been so much displeased, when she became sensible of that motive, proved the strongest recommendation to her favour; and she was pleased to call it generous.

‘ Gene-

‘ Generous!’ repeated the lady, ‘ and so it was, almost beyond the reach of humanity. I question whether you ever had an equal.’

Perhaps the critical reader may have the same doubt with Miss Matthews, and, lest he should, we will here make a gap in our history, to give him an opportunity of accurately considering whether this conduct of Mr. Booth was natural or no; and consequently, whether we have, in this place, maintained or deviated from that strict adherence to universal truth which we profess above all other historians.

C H A P. III.

The narrative continued. More of the touchstone.

BOOTH made a proper acknowledgment of Miss Matthews’s civility, and then renewed his story.

‘ We were upon the footing of lovers; and Amelia threw off her reserve more and more, till at length I found all that return of my affection which the tenderest lover can require.

‘ My situation would now have been a paradise, had not my happiness been interrupted with the same reflexions I have already mentioned; had I not in short concluded, that I must derive all my joys from the almost certain ruin of that dear creature to whom I should owe them.

‘ This thought haunted me night and day; till I, at last, grew unable to support it: I therefore resolved in the strongest manner to lay it before Amelia.

‘ One evening then, after the highest professions of the most disinterested love, in which Heaven knows my sincerity, I took an occasion to speak to Amelia, in the following manner:

“ Too true is it, I am afraid, my dearest creature, that the highest human happiness is imperfect. How rich would be my cup, was it not for one poisonous drop which imbitters the whole!

“ O Ame-

“ O Amelia, what must be the consequence of my
“ ever having the honour to call you mine!—You
“ know my situation in life, and you know your
“ own: I have nothing more than the poor pro-
“ vision of an ensign’s commission to depend on;
“ your sole dependance is on your mother; should
“ any act of disobedience defeat your expectations,
“ how wretched must your lot be with me! O
“ Amelia, how ghastly an object to my mind is the
“ apprehension of your distress! can I bear to re-
“ flect a moment on the certainty of your forego-
“ ing all the conveniencies of life; on the possi-
“ bility of your suffering all its most dreadful in-
“ conveniencies! what must be my misery then, to
“ see you in such a situation, and to upbraid myself
“ with being the accursed cause of bringing you to
“ it! suppose too, in such a season, I should be
“ summoned from you. Could I submit to see you
“ encounter all the hazards, the fatigues of war,
“ with me! you could not yourself, however wil-
“ ling, support them a single campaign. What
“ then, must I leave you to starve alone, deprived
“ of the tenderness of a husband, deprived too of
“ the tenderness of the best of mothers, through
“ my means? a woman most dear to me, for being
“ the parent, the nurse, and the friend of my
“ Amelia.—But, O my sweet creature, carry
“ your thoughts a little farther. Think of the
“ tenderest consequences, the dearest pledges of
“ our love. Can I bear to think of entailing beg-
“ gary on the posterity of my Amelia? on our—
“ O Heavens! on our children?—On the other
“ side, is it possible even to mention the word—I
“ will not, must not, cannot, cannot part with you.
“ —What must we do, Amelia? it is now I sincerely
“ ask your advice.”

‘ What advice can I give you,’ said she, ‘ in such
‘ an alternative? would to Heaven we had never
‘ met.’

‘ These words were accompanied with a sigh, and
‘ a look inexpressibly tender, the tears at the same
‘ time overflowing all her lovely cheeks. I was
‘ endea-

endeavouring to reply, when I was interrupted by what soon put an end to the scene.

Our amour had already been buzzed all over the town; and it came at last to the ears of Mrs. Harris: I had, indeed, observed of late a great alteration in that lady's behaviour towards me, whenever I visited at the house; nor could I for a long time, before this evening, ever obtain a private interview with Amelia; and now it seems, I owed it to her mother's intention of over-hearing all that passed between us.

At the period then abovementioned, Mrs. Harris burst from the closet, where she had hid herself, and surprised her daughter, reclining on my bosom, in all that tender sorrow I have just described. I will not attempt to paint the rage of the mother, or the daughter's confusion, or my own. "Here are very fine doings, indeed," cries Mrs Harris; "You have made a noble use, Amelia, of my indulgence, and the trust I reposed in you.—As for you, Mr. Booth, I will not accuse you; you have used my child, as I ought to have expected; I may thank myself for what hath happened;" with much more of the same kind, before she would suffer me to speak; but, at last, I obtained a hearing, and offered to excuse my poor Amelia, who was ready to sink into the earth under the oppression of grief, by taking as much blame as I could on myself.' Mrs. Harris answered, "No, sir, I must say you are innocent in comparison of her; nay, I can say, I have heard you use dissuasive arguments; and I promise you they are of weight. I have, I thank heaven, one dutiful child, and I shall henceforth think her my only one:" She then forced the poor, trembling, fainting Amelia out of the room; which when she had done, she began very coolly to reason with me on the folly, as well as iniquity, which I had been guilty of; and repeated to me almost every word I had before urged to her daughter. In fine, she at last obtained of me a promise that I would soon go to my regiment,

‘ment, and submit to any misery, rather than that
‘of being the ruin of Amelia.

‘I now, for many days, endured the greatest
‘torments which the human mind is, I believe,
‘capable of feeling: and I can honestly say, I tried
‘all the means, and applied every argument which
‘I could raise to cure me of my love. And to
‘make these the more effectual, I spent every
‘night in walking backwards and forwards in the
‘sight of Mrs. Harris’s house, where I never failed
‘to find some object or other, which raised some
‘tender idea of my lovely Amelia, and almost
‘drove me to distraction.’

‘And, don’t you think, sir,’ said Miss Matthews, ‘you took a most preposterous method to
‘cure yourself?’

‘Alas, madam,’ answered he, ‘you cannot see
‘it in a more absurd light than I do; but those
‘know little of real love or grief, who do not
‘know how much we deceive ourselves when we
‘pretend to aim at the cure of either. It is with
‘these, as it is with some distempers of the body,
‘nothing is, in the least, agreeable to us but what
‘serves to heighten the disease.

‘At the end of a fortnight, when I was driven
‘almost to the highest degree of despair, and could
‘contrive no method of conveying a letter to
‘Amelia, how was I surprised when Mrs. Harris’s
‘servant brought me a card, with an invitation
‘from the mother herself, to drink tea that evening
‘at her house!

‘You will easily believe, madam, that I did not
‘fail so agreeable an appointment; on my arrival,
‘I was introduced into a large company of men
‘and women, Mrs. Harris, and my Amelia being
‘part of the company.

‘Amelia seemed in my eyes to look more beautiful than ever, and behaved with all the gaiety
‘imaginable. The old lady treated me with much
‘civility; but the young lady took little notice of
‘me, and addressed most of her discourse to another gentleman present. Indeed, she now and
‘then

‘ then gave me a look of no discouraging kind ;
 ‘ and I observed her colour change more than once,
 ‘ when her eyes met mine : circumstances which,
 ‘ perhaps, ought to have afforded me sufficient
 ‘ comfort ; but they could not allay the thousand
 ‘ doubts and fears with which I was alarmed : for
 ‘ my anxious thoughts suggested no less to me than
 ‘ that Amelia had made her peace with her mother
 ‘ at the price of abandoning me for ever, and of
 ‘ giving her ear to some other lover. All my
 ‘ prudence now vanished at once ; and I would that
 ‘ instant have gladly run away with Amelia, and
 ‘ have married her without the least consideration
 ‘ of any consequences.

‘ With such thoughts I had tormented myself
 ‘ for near two hours, till most of the company had
 ‘ taken their leave. This I was myself incapable
 ‘ of doing ; nor do I know when I should have put
 ‘ an end to my visit, had not Dr. Harrison taken
 ‘ me away almost by force, telling me in a whisper,
 ‘ that he had something to say to me of great conse-
 ‘ quence.—You know the doctor, madam—’

‘ Very well, sir,’ answered Miss Matthews, ‘ and
 ‘ one of the best men in the world he is, and an ho-
 ‘ nour to the sacred order to which he belongs.’

‘ You will judge,’ replied Booth, ‘ by the sequel,
 ‘ whether I have reason to think him so.—He
 ‘ then proceeded as in the next chapter.

C H A P. IV.

The story of Mr. Booth continued : In this chapter the reader will perceive a glimpse of the character of a very good divine ; with some matters of a very tender kind.

‘ **T**HE doctor conducted me into his study ;
 ‘ and then desiring me to sit down, began,
 ‘ as near as I can remember, in these words, or at
 ‘ least to this purpose :

“ You cannot imagine, young gentleman, that
 “ your love for Miss Emily is any secret in this
 “ place ; I have known it some time, and have
 “ been,

“ been, I assure you, very much your enemy in this
“ affair.”

‘ I answered, that I was very much obliged to
‘ him.’

“ Why, so you are,” replied he, “ and so per-
“ haps you will think yourself when you know
“ all.—I went about a fortnight ago to Mrs. Har-
“ ris, to acquaint her with my apprehensions on
“ her daughter’s account: for though the matter
“ was much talked of, I thought it might possibly
“ not have reached her ears. I will be very plain
“ with you. I advised her to take all possible care
“ of the young lady, and even to send her to some
“ place, where she might be effectually kept out of
“ your reach, while you remained in the town.”

‘ And do you think, sir,’ said I, ‘ that this was
‘ acting a kind part by me? or do you expect that
‘ I should thank you on this occasion?’

“ Young man,” answered he, “ I did not in-
“ tend you any kindness; nor do I desire any of
“ your thanks. My intention was to preserve a
“ worthy lady from a young fellow of whom I had
“ heard no good character, and whom I imagined
“ to have a design of stealing a human creature for
“ the sake of her fortune.”

‘ It was very kind of you, indeed,’ answered I,
‘ to entertain such an opinion of me.’

“ Why, sir,” replied the doctor, “ it is the opi-
“ nion which, I believe, most of you young gentle-
“ men, of the order of the rag deserve. I have
“ known some instances, and have heard of more,
“ where such young fellows have committed robbery
“ under the name of marriage.”

‘ I was going to interrupt him with some anger,
‘ when he desired me to have a little patience, and
‘ then informed me, that he had visited Mrs. Har-
‘ ris, with the abovementioned design, the even-
‘ ing after the discovery I have related; that Mrs.
‘ Harris, without waiting for his information, had
‘ recounted to him all which had happened the
‘ evening before; and indeed she must have an
‘ excellent memory, for I think she repeated every
‘ word

‘ word I said; and added, that she had confined
‘ her daughter to her chamber, where she kept her
‘ a close prisoner, and had not seen her since.

‘ I cannot express, nor would modesty suffer me
‘ if I could, all that now past. The doctor took
‘ me by the hand, and burst forth into the warmest
‘ commendations of the sense and generosity which
‘ he was pleased to say discovered themselves in my
‘ speech. You know, madam, his strong and singular
‘ way of expressing himself on all occasions,
‘ especially when he is affected with any thing. Sir,
‘ said he, if I knew half a dozen such instances in
‘ the army, the painter should put red liveries upon
‘ all the saints in my closet.

‘ From this instant the doctor told me, he had
‘ become my friend and zealous advocate with Mrs.
‘ Harris, on whom he had at last prevailed, though
‘ not without the greatest difficulty, to consent to
‘ my marrying Amelia, upon condition that I settled
‘ every penny which the mother should lay down;
‘ and that she would retain a certain sum in her
‘ hands, which she would at any time deposit for
‘ my advancement in the army.

‘ You will, I hope, madam, conceive, that I
‘ made no hesitation at these conditions; nor need
‘ I mention the joy which I felt on this occasion, or
‘ the acknowledgment I paid the doctor, who is
‘ indeed, as you say, one of the best of men.

‘ The next morning I had permission to visit
‘ Amelia, who received me in such a manner, that
‘ I now concluded my happiness to be complete.

‘ Every thing was now agreed on all sides, and
‘ lawyers employed to prepare the writings, when
‘ an unexpected cloud arose suddenly in our serene
‘ sky, and all our joys were obscured in a moment.

‘ When matters were, as I apprehended, drawing
‘ near a conclusion, I received an express that a
‘ sister, whom I tenderly loved, was seized with a
‘ violent fever, and earnestly desired me to come to
‘ her. I immediately obeyed the summons, and,
‘ as it was then about two in the morning, without
‘ staying even to take leave of Amelia, for whom

‘ I left a short billet, acquainting her with the reason of my absence.

‘ The gentleman’s house where my sister then was, stood at fifty miles distance, and though I used the utmost expedition, the unmerciful disposition had, before my arrival, entirely deprived the poor girl of her senses, as it soon after did of her life.

‘ Not all the love I bore Amelia, nor the tumultuous delight with which the approaching hour of possessing her filled my heart, could, for a while, allay my grief at the loss of my beloved Nancy. Upon my soul, I cannot yet mention her name without tears. Never brother and sister had, I believe, a higher friendship for each other. Poor dear girl; whilst I sat by her in her light-headed fits, she repeated scarce any other name but mine: and it plainly appeared that when her dear reason was ravished away from her, it had left my image on her fancy, and that the last use she had made of it was to think on me.—“ Send for my dear Billy immediately,” she cried, “ I know he will come to me in a moment. Will nobody fetch him to me? pray don’t kill me before I see him once more—You durst not use me so if he was here.”—Every accent still rings in my ears—Oh heavens! to hear this, and at the same time to see the poor delirious creature deriving the greatest horrors from my sight, and mistaking me for a highwayman who had a little before robbed her.—But I ask your pardon, the sensations I felt are to be known only from experience, and to you must appear dull and insipid.—At last she seemed for a moment to know me, and cried, “ O heavens! my dearest brother!” upon which she fell into immediate convulsions, and died away in my arms.’

Here Booth stopped a moment, and wiped his eyes; and Miss Matthews, perhaps out of complaisance, wiped hers.

C H A P. V.

Containing strange revolutions of fortune.

BOOTH proceeded thus:

‘ This loss, perhaps, madam, you will think
‘ had made me miserable enough; but fortune did
‘ not think so: for on the day when my Nancy
‘ was to be buried, a courier arrived from Dr.
‘ Harrison with a letter, in which the doctor ac-
‘ quainted me, that he was just come from Mrs.
‘ Harris, when he dispatched the express; and ear-
‘ nestly desired me to return the very instant I re-
‘ ceived his letter, as I valued my Amelia. Though
‘ if the daughter, added he, should take after her
‘ mother (as most of them do) it will be, perhaps,
‘ wiser in you to stay away.

‘ I presently sent for the messenger into my room,
‘ and with much difficulty extorted from him, that
‘ a great squire in his coach and six was come to
‘ Mrs. Harris’s, and that the whole town said he
‘ was shortly to be married to Amelia.

‘ I now soon perceived how much superior my
‘ love for Amelia was to every other passion; poor
‘ Nancy’s idea disappeared in a moment; I quitted
‘ the dear lifeless corpse, over which I had shed a
‘ thousand tears, left the care of the funeral to
‘ others, and posted, I may almost say flew, back
‘ to Amelia, and alighted at the doctor’s house, as
‘ he had desired me in his letter.

‘ The good man presently acquainted me with
‘ what had happened in my absence. Mr. Winck-
‘ worth had, it seems, arrived the very day of my
‘ departure with a grand equipage, and without
‘ delay, had made formal proposals to Mrs. Harris,
‘ offering to settle any part of his vast estate, in
‘ whatever manner she pleased, on Amelia. These
‘ proposals the old lady had, without any delibe-
‘ ration, accepted, and had insisted, in the most
‘ violent manner, on her daughter’s compliance,
‘ which Amelia had as peremptorily refused to
‘ give; insisting, on her part, on the consent which
‘ her

‘ her mother had before given to our marriage, in
‘ which she was heartily seconded by the doctor, who
‘ declared to her, as he now did to me,’ “ that we
“ ought as much to be esteemed man and wife, as if
“ the ceremony had already past between us.”

‘ These remonstrances, the doctor told me, had
‘ worked no effect on Mrs. Harris, who still persisted
‘ in her avowed resolution of marrying her daughter
‘ to Winckworth, whom the doctor had likewise
‘ attacked, telling him that he was paying his addresses
‘ to another man’s wife ; but all to no purpose, the
‘ young gentleman was too much in love to hearken
‘ to any dissuaves.

‘ We now entered into a consultation what means
‘ to employ. The doctor earnestly protested against
‘ any violence to be offered to the person of Winckworth,
‘ which, I believe, I had rashly threatened ;
‘ declaring, that if I made any attempt of that kind,
‘ he would for ever abandon my cause. I made him
‘ a solemn promise of forbearance. At last, he determined
‘ to pay another visit to Mrs. Harris, and if
‘ he found her obdurate, he said he thought himself
‘ at liberty to join us together without any further
‘ consent of the mother ; which every parent, he said,
‘ had a right to refuse, but not to retract when given,
‘ unless the party himself, by some conduct of his,
‘ gave a reason.

‘ The doctor having made his visit with no better
‘ success than before, the matter now debated was,
‘ how to get possession of Amelia by stratagem : for
‘ she was now a closer prisoner than ever, was her
‘ mother’s bed-fellow by night, and never out of her
‘ sight by day.

‘ While we were deliberating on this point, a wine
‘ merchant of the town came to visit the doctor, to
‘ inform him that he had just bottled off a hoghead
‘ of excellent old port, of which he offered to spare
‘ him a hamper, saying, that he was that day to
‘ send in twelve dozen to Mrs. Harris.

‘ The doctor now smiled at a conceit which came
‘ into his head ; and, taking me aside, asked me if
‘ I had love enough for the young lady to venture
‘ into

‘ into the house in a hamper. I joyfully leapt at
‘ the proposal, to which the merchant, at the doc-
‘ tor’s intercession, consented : for I believe, madam,
‘ you know the great authority which that worthy
‘ man had over the whole town. The doctor, more-
‘ over, promised to procure a licence, and to perform
‘ the office for us at his house, if I could find any
‘ means of conveying Amelia thither.

‘ In this hamper then I was carried to the house,
‘ and deposited in the entry, where I had not lain
‘ long before I was again removed and packed up in
‘ a cart, in order to be sent five miles into the coun-
‘ try : for I heard the orders given as I lay in the en-
‘ try ; and there I likewise heard that Amelia and her
‘ mother were to follow me the next morning.

‘ I was unloaded from my cart, and set down with
‘ the rest of the lumber, in a great hall. Here I re-
‘ mained above three hours, impatiently waiting for
‘ the evening, when I determined to quit a posture,
‘ which was become very uneasy, and break my pri-
‘ son ; but fortune contrived to release me sooner, by
‘ the following means : The house where I now was,
‘ had been left in the care of one maid-servant. This
‘ faithful creature came into the hall, with the foot-
‘ man who had driven the cart. A scene of the high-
‘ est fondness having past between them, the fellow
‘ proposed, and the maid consented, to open the
‘ hamper and drink a bottle together, which they a-
‘ greed their mistress would hardly miss in such a
‘ quantity. They presently began to execute their
‘ purpose. They opened the hamper, and to their
‘ great surprise discovered the contents.

‘ I took an immediate advantage of the consterna-
‘ tion which appeared in the countenances of both
‘ the servants, and had sufficient presence of mind to
‘ improve the knowledge of those secrets to which I
‘ was privy. I told them that it entirely depended on
‘ their behaviour to me whether their mistress should
‘ ever be acquainted, either with what they had
‘ done, or with what they had intended to do : for
‘ that if they would keep my secret, I would reciprocally keep theirs. I then acquainted them with my
pur-

‘ purpose of lying concealed in the house, in order
 ‘ to watch an opportunity of obtaining a private in-
 ‘ terview with Amelia.

‘ In the situation in which these two delinquents
 ‘ stood, you may be assured it was not difficult for
 ‘ me to seal up their lips. In short, they agreed to
 ‘ whatever I proposed. I lay that evening in my dear
 ‘ Amelia’s bed-chamber, and was in the morning
 ‘ conveyed into an old lumber garret, where I was to
 ‘ wait till Amelia (whom the maid promised, on her
 ‘ arrival, to inform of my place of concealment)
 ‘ could find some opportunity of seeing me.

‘ I ask pardon for interrupting you,’ cries Miss
 Matthews, ‘ but you bring to my remembrance a fool-
 ‘ ish story which I heard at that time, though at a
 ‘ great distance from you: that an officer had, in
 ‘ confederacy with Miss Harris, broke open her mo-
 ‘ ther’s cellar, and stole away a great quantity of her
 ‘ wine. I mention it only to shew you what sort of
 ‘ foundations most stories have.’

Booth told her he had heard some such thing him-
 self, and then continued his story as in the next
 chapter.

C H A P. VI.

Containing many surprising adventures.

‘ **H** E R E,’ continued he, ‘ I remained the whole
 ‘ day in hopes of a happiness, the expected
 ‘ approach of which, gave me such a delight, that
 ‘ I would not have exchanged my poor lodgings for
 ‘ the finest palace in the universe.

‘ A little after it was dark Mrs. Harris arrived, to-
 ‘ gether with Amelia and her sister. I cannot express
 ‘ how much my heart now began to flutter; for as
 ‘ my hopes every moment encreased, strange fears
 ‘ which I had not felt before began now to intermin-
 ‘ gle with them.

‘ When I had continued full two hours in these
 ‘ circumstances, I heard a woman’s step tripping
 ‘ up stairs, which I fondly hoped was my Amelia;

‘ but all on a sudden the door flew open, and Mrs. Harris herself appeared at it, with a countenance pale as death, her whole body trembling, I suppose, with anger ; she fell upon me in the most bitter language. It is not necessary to repeat what she said, nor indeed can I, I was so shocked and confounded on this occasion.—In a word, the scene ended with my departing without seeing Amelia.’

‘ And pray,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ how happened this unfortunate discovery ?’

Booth answered, ‘ that the lady at supper ordered a bottle of wine, which neither myself,’ said he, ‘ nor the servants, had presence of mind to provide. Being told there was none in the house, though she had been before informed that the things came all safe, she had sent for the maid, who being unable to devise any excuse, had fallen on her knees, and after confessing her design of opening a bottle, which she imputed to the fellow, betrayed poor me to her mistress.’

‘ Well, madam, after a lecture of about a quarter of an hour’s duration from Mrs. Harris, I suffered her to conduct me to the outward gate of her courtyard, whence I set forward in a disconsolate condition of mind, towards my lodgings. I had five miles to walk in a dark and rainy night ; but how can I mention these trifling circumstances as any aggravation of my disappointment.’

‘ How was it possible,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ that you could be got out of the house without seeing Miss Harris ?’

‘ I assure you, madam,’ answered Booth, ‘ I have often wondered at it myself ; but my spirits were so much sunk at the sight of her mother, that no man was ever a greater coward than I was at that instant. Indeed, I believe my tender concern for the terrors of Amelia, were the principal cause of my submission. However it was, I left the house, and walked about an hundred yards, when, at the corner of the garden wall, a female voice, in a whisper, cried out, “ Mr. Booth.” The person was extremely near me, but it was so dark I could
VOL. X. E scarce

‘ scarce see her ; nor did I, in the confusion I was in,
‘ immediately recognize the voice. I answered in a
‘ line of Congreve’s, which burst from my lips spon-
‘ taneously ; for I am sure I had no intention to quote
‘ plays at that time :

‘ Who calls the wretched thing that was Al-
‘ phonso ?”

‘ Upon which a woman leapt into my arms, crying
‘ out,——“ O it is indeed my Alphonso, my only
‘ Alphonso !”——“ O Miss Matthews ! guess what I felt
‘ when I found I had my Amelia in my arms. I em-
‘ braced her with an extasy not to be described, at the
‘ same instant pouring a thousand tenderesses into her
‘ ears ; at least, if I could express so many to her in a
‘ minute ; for in that time the alarm began at the
‘ house, Mrs. Harris had missed her daughter, and the
‘ court was presently full of lights and noises of all
‘ kinds.

‘ I now lifted Amelia over a gate, and jumping
‘ after, we crept along together by the side of a hedge
‘ a different way from what led to the town, as I ima-
‘ gined that would be the road through which they
‘ would pursue us. In this opinion I was right : for
‘ we heard them pass along that road, and the voice
‘ of Mrs. Harris herself, who ran with the rest, not-
‘ withstanding the darkness and the rain. By these
‘ means we luckily made our escape, and clambering
‘ over hedge and ditch, my Amelia performing the
‘ part of a heroine all the way, we at length arrived
‘ at a little green lane, where stood a vast spreading
‘ oak, under which we sheltered ourselves from a vio-
‘ lent storm.

‘ When this was over, and the moon began to ap-
‘ pear, Amelia declared she knew very well where she
‘ was ; and a little farther, striking into another lane,
‘ to the right, she said, that would lead us to a house
‘ where we should be both safe and unsuspected. I
‘ followed her directions, and we at length came to a
‘ little cottage about three miles distant from Mrs.
‘ Harris’s house.

‘ As it now rained very violently, we entered this
‘ cottage, in which we espied a light, without any

‘ ceremony. Here we found an elderly woman sitting by herself at a little fire, who had no sooner viewed us, than she instantly sprung from her seat, and starting back, gave the strongest tokens of amazement; upon which Amelia, said, “Be not surprized, nurse, though you see me in a strange pickle I own.” “The old woman, after having several times blessed herself, and expressed the most tender concern for the lady, who stood dripping before her, began to bestir herself in making up the fire; at the same time entreating Amelia, that she might be permitted to furnish her with some cloaths, which, she said, though not fine, were clean and wholesome, and much dryer than her own. I seconded this motion so vehemently, that Amelia, though she declared herself under no apprehension of catching cold, (she hath indeed the best constitution in the world) at last consented, and I retired without doors, under a shed, to give my angel an opportunity of dressing herself in the only room which the cottage afforded below stairs.

‘ At my return into the room, Amelia insisted on my exchanging my coat for one which belonged to the old woman’s son.’ — ‘I am very glad,’ cried Miss Matthews, ‘to find she did not forget you. I own I thought it somewhat cruel to turn you out into the rain!’ — ‘O Miss Matthews,’ continued he, taking no notice of her observation, I had now an opportunity of contemplating the vast power of exquisite beauty; which nothing almost can add to or diminish. Amelia, in the poor rags of her old nurse, looked scarce less beautiful than I have seen her appear at a ball or an assembly’ — ‘Well, well,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘to be sure she did; — but pray go on with your story.’

‘ The old woman,’ continued he, ‘after having equipped us as well as she could, and placed our wet cloaths before the fire, began to grow inquisitive; and after some ejaculations, she cried — “O my dear young madam, my mind misgives me hugely, and pray who is this fine young

E 2

“ gen-

“gentleman? oh! Miss Emmy, Miss Emmy, I
“am afraid madam knows nothing of all this mat-
“ter. “Suppose he should be my husband, nurse,”
“answered Amelia,—“Oh! good! and if he
“be,” replies the nurse, “I hope he is some great
“gentleman or other, with a vast estate, and a
“coach and six: for to be sure if an he was the
“greatest lord in the land, you would deserve it
“all.”—“But why do I attempt to mimic the ho-
“nest creature. In short, she discovered the greatest
“affection for my Amelia: with which I was much
“more delighted than I was offended at the suspicions
“she shewed of me, or the many bitter curses which
“she denounced against me, if I ever proved a bad
“husband to so sweet a young lady.

“I so well improved the hint given me by Ame-
“lia, that the old woman had no doubt of our be-
“ing really married; and comforting herself, that
“if it was not as well as it might have been, yet
“madam had enough for us both, and that hap-
“piness did not always depend on great riches, she
“began to rail at the old lady for having turned us
“out of doors, which I scarce told an untruth in
“asserting. And when Amelia said, “she hoped
“her nurse would not betray her”—The good
“woman answered with much warmth,—betray
“you, my dear young madam! no, that I would
“not if the king would give me all that he is
“worth. No, not if madam herself would give me
“the great house, and the whole farm belonging
“to it.”

“The good woman then went out and fetched a
“chicken from the roost, which she killed, and
“began to pick, without asking any questions.
“Then summoning her son, who was in bed, to
“her assistance, she began to prepare this chicken
“for our supper. This she afterwards set before
“us in so neat, I may almost say elegant a man-
“ner, that whoever would have disdained it, either
“doth not know the sensation of hunger, or doth
“not deserve to have it gratified. Our food was
“attended

‘ attended with some ale, which our kind hostess
‘ said she intended not to have tapped till Christ-
‘ mas; “but,” added she, “I little thought ever
‘ to have the honour of seeing my dear honoured
‘ lady in this poor place.”’

‘ For my own part, no human being was then
‘ an object of envy to me; and even Amelia seem-
‘ ed to be in pretty good spirits; she softly whis-
‘ pered to me, that she perceived there might be
‘ happiness in a cottage.’

‘ A cottage!’ cries Miss Matthews sighing, ‘ a
‘ cottage with the man one loves is a palace.’

‘ When supper was ended,’ continued Booth,
‘ the good woman began to think of our further
‘ wants, and very earnestly recommended her bed
‘ to us, saying it was a very neat though homely
‘ one, and that she could furnish us with a pair
‘ of clean sheets. She added some persuasives which
‘ painted my angel all over with vermillion. As
‘ for myself, I behaved so awkwardly and foolishly,
‘ and so readily agreed to Amelia’s resolution of
‘ sitting up all night, that if it did not give the
‘ nurse any suspicion of our marriage, it ought to
‘ have inspired her with the utmost contempt for
‘ me.

‘ We both endeavoured to prevail with nurse to
‘ retire to her own bed, but found it utterly im-
‘ possible to succeed; she thanked heaven she un-
‘ derstood breeding better than that. And so well
‘ bred was the good woman, that we could scarce
‘ get her out of the room the whole night. Luckily
‘ for us we both understood French, by means of
‘ which we consulted together, even in her presence,
‘ upon the measures we were to take in our present
‘ exigency. At length it was resolved that I should
‘ send a letter by this young lad whom I have just
‘ before mentioned, to our worthy friend the doctor,
‘ desiring his company at our hut, since we thought
‘ it utterly unsafe to venture to the town, which we
‘ knew would be in an uproar on our account before
‘ the morning.’

Here Booth made a full stop, smiled, and then said, he was going to mention so ridiculous a distress, that he could scarce think of it without laughing.—What this was the reader shall know in the next chapter.

C H A P. VII.

The story of Booth continued. More surprising adventures.

‘FROM what trifles, dear Miss Matthews,’ cried Booth, ‘may some of our greatest distresses arise! do you not perceive I am going to tell you we had neither pen, ink, nor paper in our present exigency.

‘A verbal message was now our only resource; however, we contrived to deliver it in such terms, that neither nurse nor her son could possibly conceive any suspicion from it of the present situation of our affairs. Indeed, Amelia whispered me, I might safely place any degree of confidence in the lad; for he had been her foster brother, and she had a great opinion of his integrity. He was in truth a boy of very good natural parts; and Dr. Harison, who had received him into his family, at Amelia’s recommendation, had bred him up to write and read very well, and had taken some pains to infuse into him the principles of honesty and religion. He was not indeed, even now discharged from the doctor’s service; but had been at home with his mother for some time on account of the small-pox, from which he was lately recovered.

‘I have said so much,’ continued Booth, ‘of the boy’s character, that you may not be surprised at some stories which I shall tell you of him hereafter.

‘I am going now, madam, to relate to you one of those strange accidents, which are produced by such a train of circumstances, that mere chance
‘hath

‘ hath been thought incapable of bringing them
‘ together ; and which have therefore given birth,
‘ in superstitious minds, to fortune, and to several
‘ other imaginary beings.

‘ We were now impatiently expecting the arrival
‘ of the doctor ; our messenger had been gone much
‘ more than a sufficient time, which to us, you may
‘ be assured, appeared not at all shorter than it was,
‘ when nurse, who had gone out of doors on some
‘ errand, came running hastily to us, crying out,
“ O my dear young madam, her ladyship’s coach
“ is just at the door.” Amelia turned pale as death
‘ at these words ; indeed, I feared she would have
‘ fainted, if I could be said to fear, who had scarce
‘ any of my senses left, and was in a condition little
‘ better than my angel’s.

‘ While we were both in this dreadful situation,
‘ Amelia fallen back in her chair with the counte-
‘ nance in which ghosts are painted, myself at her
‘ feet, with a complexion of no very different co-
‘ lour, and nurse screaming out, and throwing wa-
‘ ter in Amelia’s face, Mrs. Harris entered the room.
‘ At the sight of this scene, she threw herself likewise
‘ into a chair, and called immediately for a glass of
‘ water, which Miss Betty her daughter supplied her
‘ with : for as to nurse, nothing was capable of mak-
‘ ing any impression on her, whilst she apprehended
‘ her young mistress to be in danger.

‘ The doctor had now entered the room, and
‘ coming immediately up to Amelia, after some ex-
‘ pressions of surprize, he took her by the hand,
‘ called her his little sugar-plumb, and assured her
‘ there were none but friends present. He then
‘ led her tottering across the room to Mrs. Harris.
‘ Amelia then fell upon her knees before her mo-
‘ ther, but the doctor caught her up saying, “ use
“ that posture, child, only to the Almighty ;” but
‘ I need not mention this singularity of his to you
‘ who know him so well, and must have heard him
‘ often dispute against addressing ourselves to man
‘ in the humblest posture which we use towards the
‘ supreme being.

‘ I will tire you with no more particulars ; we
‘ were soon satisfied that the doctor had reconciled
‘ us and our affairs to Mrs. Harris ; and we now
‘ proceeded directly to church, the doctor having
‘ before provided a licence for us.’

‘ But where is the strange accident,’ cried Miss
Matthews? ‘ sure you raised more curiosity than you
‘ have satisfied.’

‘ Indeed, madam,’ answered he, ‘ your reproof
‘ is just ; I had like to have forgotten it ; but you
‘ cannot wonder at me, when you reflect on that in-
‘ teresting part of my story, which I am now relat-
‘ ing.—But before I mention this accident, I must
‘ tell you what happened after Amelia’s escape from
‘ her mother’s house. Mrs. Harris at first ran out
‘ into the lane among her servants, and pursued us
‘ (so she imagined) along the road leading to the
‘ town ; but that being very dirty, and a violent
‘ storm of rain coming, she took shelter in an ale-
‘ house, about half a mile from her own house,
‘ whither she sent for her coach : she then drove
‘ together with her daughter to town ; where soon
‘ after her arrival, she sent for the doctor, her usual
‘ privy counsellor in all her affairs. They sat up
‘ all night together, the doctor endeavouring, by
‘ arguments and persuasions, to bring Mrs. Harris
‘ to reason ; but all to no purpose, though, as he
‘ hath informed me, Miss Betty seconded him with
‘ the warmest entreaties.’

Here Miss Matthews laughed ; of which Booth
begged to know the reason ; she, at last, after many
apologies, said, ‘ It was the first good thing she
‘ ever heard of Miss Betty ; nay,’ said she, ‘ and
‘ asking your pardon for my opinion of your sister,
‘ since you will have it, I always conceived her to
‘ be the deepest of hypocrites.’

Booth fetched a sigh, and said, he was afraid she
had not always acted so kindly ;—and then after a
little hesitation proceeded.

‘ You will be pleased, madam, to remember, the
‘ lad was sent with a verbal message to the doctor ;
‘ which message was no more than to acquaint him
‘ where

‘ where we were, and to desire the favour of his
‘ company, or that he would send a coach to
‘ bring us to whatever place he would please to
‘ meet us at. This message was to be delivered to
‘ the doctor himself, and the messenger was order-
‘ ed, if he found him not at home, to go to him
‘ wherever he was. He fulfilled his orders, and
‘ told it to the doctor in the presence of Mrs.
‘ Harris.’

‘ Oh! the idiot,’ cries Miss Matthews. ‘ Not
‘ at all,’ answered Booth: ‘ he is a very sensible
‘ fellow, as you will, perhaps, say hereafter. He
‘ had not the least reason to suspect that any secrecy
‘ was necessary: for we took the utmost care he
‘ should not suspect it.—Well, madam, this acci-
‘ dent, which appeared so unfortunate, turned in
‘ the highest degree to our advantage, Mrs. Har-
‘ ris no sooner heard the message delivered, than
‘ she fell into the most violent passion imaginable,
‘ and accused the doctor of being in the plot, and
‘ of having confederated with me in the design of
‘ carrying off her daughter.

‘ The doctor, who had hitherto used only sooth-
‘ ing methods, now talked in a different strain. He
‘ confessed the accusation, and justified his conduct.
‘ He said he was no meddler in the family affairs
‘ of others, nor should he have concerned himself
‘ with hers, but at her own request; but that since
‘ Mrs. Harris herself had made him an agent in
‘ this matter, he would take care to acquit himself
‘ with honour, and above all things to preserve a
‘ young lady for whom he had the highest esteem;
‘ “ for she is,” cries he, and by heavens he said
‘ true, “ the most worthy, generous, and noble of
‘ all human beings.” You have yourself, madam,
‘ said he, consented to the match. I have, at your
‘ request, made the match; and then he added
‘ some particulars relating to his opinion of me,
‘ which my modesty forbids me to repeat.’—‘ Nay
‘ but,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ I insist on your con-
‘ quest of that modesty for once.—We women do
‘ not love to hear one another’s praises, and I will

‘ be made amends by hearing the praises of a man,
‘ and of a man, whom perhaps,’ added she with a
‘ leer, ‘ I shall not think much the better of upon
‘ that account.’—‘ In obedience to your commands
‘ then, madam,’ continued he, ‘ the doctor was so
‘ kind to say, he had enquired into my character,
‘ and had found that I had been a dutiful son, and
‘ an affectionate brother. Relations, said he, in
‘ which, whoever discharges his duty well, gives us
‘ a well-grounded hope, that he will behave as
‘ properly in all the rest.—He concluded with
‘ saying, that Amelia’s happiness, her heart, nay,
‘ her very reputation, were all concerned in this
‘ matter, to which as he had been made instru-
‘ mental, he was resolved to carry her through it;
‘ and then taking the licence from his pocket, de-
‘ clared to Mrs. Harris, that he would go that in-
‘ stant and marry her daughter wherever he found
‘ her. This speech, the doctor’s voice, his look,
‘ and his behaviour, all which are sufficiently cal-
‘ culated to inspire awe, and even terror, when he
‘ pleases, frightened poor Mrs. Harris, and wrought
‘ a more sensible effect than it was in his power to
‘ produce by all his arguments and entreaties ; and
‘ I have already related what followed.

‘ Thus the strange accident of our wanting pen,
‘ ink, and paper, and our not trusting the boy
‘ with our secret, occasioned the discovery to Mrs.
‘ Harris : that discovery put the doctor upon his
‘ metal, and produced that blessed event which I
‘ have recounted to you, and which as my mother
‘ hath since confessed, nothing but the spirit which
‘ he had exerted after the discovery, could have
‘ brought about.

‘ Well, madam, you now see me married to
‘ Amelia ; in which situation you will, perhaps,
‘ think my happiness incapable of addition. Per-
‘ haps it was so ; and yet I can with truth say, that
‘ the love which I then bore Amelia, was not com-
‘ parable to what I bear her now.’ ‘ Happy Ame-
‘ lia !’ cried Miss Matthews. ‘ If all men were
‘ like you, all women would be blessed ; nay, the
‘ whole

‘ whole world would be so in a great measure : for
 ‘ upon my soul, I believe that from the damned in-
 ‘ constancy of your sex to ours proceeds half the
 ‘ miseries of mankind.’

That we may give the reader leisure to consider well the foregoing sentiment, we will here put an end to this chapter.

C H A P. VIII.

In which our readers will probably be divided in their opinion of Mr. Booth's conduct.

BOOTH proceeded as follows:

‘ The first months of our marriage produced
 ‘ nothing remarkable enough to mention. I am
 ‘ sure I need not tell Miss Matthews that I found
 ‘ in my Amelia every perfection of human nature.
 ‘ Mrs. Harris at first gave us some little uneasiness.
 ‘ She had rather yielded to the doctor than given a
 ‘ willing consent to the match ; however, by de-
 ‘ grees, she became more and more satisfied, and
 ‘ at last seemed perfectly reconciled. This we
 ‘ ascribed a good deal to the kind offices of Miss
 ‘ Betty, who had always appeared to be my friend.
 ‘ She had been greatly assisting to Amelia in mak-
 ‘ ing her escape, which I had no opportunity of
 ‘ mentioning to you before, and in all things be-
 ‘ haved so well, outwardly at least, to myself as
 ‘ well as her sister, that we regarded her as our
 ‘ sincerest friend.

‘ About half a year after our marriage, two ad-
 ‘ ditional companies were added to our regiment,
 ‘ in one of which I was preferred to the command
 ‘ of a lieutenant. Upon this occasion, Miss Betty
 ‘ gave the first intimation of a disposition which we
 ‘ have since too severely experienced.’

‘ Your servant, sir,’ says Miss Matthews, ‘ then
 ‘ I find I was not mistaken in my opinion of the
 ‘ lady.—No, no, shew me any goodness in a cen-
 ‘ forious prude and’—

As Miss Matthews hesitated for a smile or an ex-
 ‘ cecration, Booth proceeded : ‘ You will please to re-

‘ member, madam, there was formerly an agree-
‘ ment between myself and Mrs. Harris, that I
‘ should settle all my Amelia’s fortune on her, ex-
‘ cept a certain sum, which was to be laid out in
‘ my advancement in the army; but as our mar-
‘ riage was carried on in the manner you have heard,
‘ no such agreement was ever executed. And
‘ since I was become Amelia’s husband, not a word of
‘ this matter was ever mentioned by the old lady;
‘ and as for myself, I declare I had not yet awakened
‘ from that delicious dream of bliss in which the
‘ possession of Amelia had lulled me.’

Here Miss Matthews sighed, and cast the tenderest of looks on Booth, who thus continued his story:

‘ Soon after my promotion, Mrs. Harris one
‘ morning took an occasion to speak to me on this
‘ affair. She said, that as I had been promoted
‘ gratis to a lieutenancy, she would assist me with
‘ money to carry me yet a step higher: and if more
‘ was required than was formerly mentioned, it
‘ should not be wanting, since she was so perfectly
‘ satisfied with my behaviour to her daughter.
‘ Adding, that she hoped I had still the same in-
‘ clination to settle on my wife the remainder of her
‘ fortune.

‘ I answered with very warm acknowledgments
‘ of my mother’s goodness, and declared if I had
‘ the world, I was ready to lay it at my Amelia’s
‘ feet.—And so, heaven knows, I would ten thou-
‘ sand worlds.

‘ Mrs. Harris seemed pleased with the warmth of
‘ my sentiments, and said, she would immediately
‘ send to her lawyer and give him the necessary or-
‘ ders; and thus ended our conversation on this
‘ subject.

‘ From this time there was a very visible altera-
‘ tion in Miss Betty’s behaviour. She grew re-
‘ served to her sister as well as to me. She was
‘ fretful and captious on the slightest occasion;
‘ nay, she affected much to talk on the ill conse-
‘ quences of an imprudent marriage, especially be-
‘ fore

‘ fore her mother; and if ever any little tender-
‘ nefs or endearments escaped me in public towards
‘ Amelia, ſhe never failed to make ſome malicious
‘ remark on the ſhort duration of violent paſſions;
‘ and when I have expreſſed a fond ſentiment for
‘ my wife, her ſiſter would kindly wiſh ſhe might hear
‘ as much ſeven years hence.

‘ All theſe matters have been ſince ſuggeſted to
‘ us by reflexion: for while they actually paſt, both
‘ Amelia and myſelf had our thoughts too happily
‘ engaged to take notice of what diſcovered itſelf
‘ in the mind of any other perſon.

‘ Unfortunately for us, Mrs. Harris’s lawyer
‘ happened at this time to be at London, where
‘ buſineſs detained him upwards of a month; and
‘ as Mrs. Harris would on no occaſion employ any
‘ other, our affair was under an entire ſuſpenſion
‘ till his return.

‘ Amelia, who was now big with child, had often
‘ expreſſed the deepeſt concern at her apprehen-
‘ ſions of my being ſome time commanded abroad;
‘ a circumſtance which ſhe declared, if it ſhould
‘ ever happen to her, even though ſhe ſhould not
‘ then be in the ſame ſituation as at preſent, would
‘ infallibly break her heart. Theſe remonſtrances
‘ were made with ſuch tenderneſs, and ſo much
‘ affected me, that to avoid any probability of ſuch
‘ an event, I endeavoured to get an exchange into
‘ the horſe-guards, a body of troops which very
‘ rarely goes abroad, unleſs where the king himſelf
‘ commands in perſon. I ſoon found an officer for
‘ my purpoſe, the terms were agreed on, and Mrs.
‘ Harris had ordered the money which I was to pay
‘ to be ready, notwithſtanding the oppoſition made
‘ by Miſs Betty, who openly diſſuaded her mother
‘ from it; alledging that the exchange was highly
‘ to my diſadvantage; that I could never hope to
‘ riſe in the army after it; not forgetting, at the
‘ ſame time, ſome inſinuations very prejudicial to
‘ my reputation as a ſoldier.

‘ When every thing was agreed on, and the two
‘ commiſſions were actually made out, but not
‘ ſigned

‘ signed by the king, one day, at my return from
‘ hunting, Amelia flew to me, and eagerly em-
‘ bracing me, cried out, “ O Billy, I have news
“ for you, which delights my soul. Nothing sure
“ was ever so fortunate as the exchange you have
“ made. The regiment you was formerly in is or-
“ dered for Gibraltar.”

‘ I received this news with far less transport than
‘ it was delivered. I answered coldly, since the
‘ case was so, I heartily hoped the commissions
‘ might be both signed. What do you say, replied
‘ Amelia eagerly?—sure you told me every thing
‘ was entirely settled. That look of yours frightens
‘ me to death.—But I am running into too minute
‘ particulars. In short, I received a letter by that
‘ very post, from the officer with whom I had ex-
‘ changed, insisting that though his majesty had
‘ not signed the commissions, that still the bargain
‘ was valid, partly urging it as a right, and partly
‘ desiring it as a favour, that he might go to Gib-
‘ raltar in my room.

‘ This letter convinced me in every point. I was
‘ now informed that the commissions were not
‘ signed, and consequently that the exchange was
‘ not completed. Of consequence the other could
‘ have no right to insist on going; and as for grant-
‘ ing him such a favour, I too clearly saw I must
‘ do it at the expence of my honour. I was now
‘ reduced to a dilemma, the most dreadful which I
‘ think any man can experience; in which I am not
‘ ashamed to own, I found love was not so over-
‘ matched by honour as he ought to have been.
‘ The thoughts of leaving Amelia, in her present
‘ condition, to misery, perhaps to death or mad-
‘ ness, were insupportable; nor could any other
‘ consideration but that, which now tormented me
‘ on the other side, have combated them a mo-
‘ ment.’

‘ No woman upon earth,’ cries Miss Matthews,
‘ can despise want of spirit in a man more than
‘ myself; and yet I cannot help thinking you was
‘ rather too nice on this occasion.’

‘ You

‘ You will allow, madam,’ answered Booth,
‘ that whoever offends against the laws of honour
‘ in the least instance, is treated as the highest de-
‘ linquent. Here is no excuse, no pardon; and he
‘ doth nothing who leaves any thing undone. But
‘ if the conflict was so terrible with myself alone,
‘ what was my situation in the presence of Amelia?
‘ how could I support her sighs, her tears, her ago-
‘ nies, her despair! could I bear to think myself
‘ the cruel cause of her sufferings, for so I was!
‘ could I endure the thought of having it in my
‘ power, to give her instant relief, for so it was, and
‘ refuse it her!

‘ Miss Betty was now again become my friend.
‘ She had scarce been civil to me for a fortnight last
‘ past, yet now she commended me to the skies,
‘ and as severely blamed her sister, whom she ar-
‘ raigned of the most contemptible weakness, in
‘ preferring my safety to my honour; she said many
‘ ill-natured things on the occasion, which I shall
‘ not now repeat.

‘ In the midst of this hurricane, the good doctor
‘ came to dine with Mrs. Harris, and at my desire
‘ delivered his opinion on the matter.’

Here Mr. Booth was interrupted in his narrative,
by the arrival of a person whom we shall introduce
in the next chapter.

C H A P. IX.

*Containing a scene of a different kind from any of the
preceding.*

TH E gentleman who now arrived was the
keeper; or if you please, (for so he pleased
to call himself) the governor of the prison.

He used so little ceremony at his approach, that
the bolt, which was very slight on the inside, gave
way, and the door immediately flew open. He
had no sooner entered the room than he acquainted
Miss Matthews that he had brought her very good
news, for which he demanded a bottle of wine as
his due.

This

This demand being complied with, he acquainted Miss Matthews that the wounded gentleman was not dead, nor was his wound thought to be mortal: that loss of blood, and, perhaps, his fright had occasioned his fainting away; ‘but I believe, madam,’ said he, ‘if you take the proper measures, you may be bailed to-morrow. I expect the lawyer here this evening, and if you put the business into his hands, I warrant it will be done. Money to be sure must be parted with, that’s to be sure. People to be sure will expect to touch a little in such cases. For my own part, I never desire to keep a prisoner longer than the law allows, not I: I always inform them they can be bailed as soon as I know it. I never make any bargain, not I; I always love to leave those things to the gentlemen and ladies themselves. I never suspect gentlemen and ladies of wanting generosity.’

Miss Matthews made a very slight answer to all these friendly professions. She said she had done nothing she repented of, and was indifferent as to the event. ‘All I can say,’ cries she, ‘is, that if the wretch is alive, there is no greater villain in life than himself;’ and instead of mentioning any thing of the bail, she begged the keeper to leave her again alone with Mr. Booth. The keeper replied, ‘nay, madam, perhaps it may be better to stay a little longer here, if you have not bail ready, than to buy them too dear. Besides, a day or two hence, when the gentleman is past all danger of recovery, to be sure some folks that would expect an extraordinary fee now, cannot expect to touch any thing. And to be sure you shall want nothing here. The best of all things are to be had here for Money, both eatable and drinkable; though I say it, I shan’t turn my back to any of the taverns for either eatables or wine. The captain there need not have been so shy of owning himself when he first came in; we have had captains and other great gentlemen here before now; and no shame to them, though I say it.’

‘ it. Many a great gentleman is sometimes found
‘ in places that don’t become them half so well, let
‘ me tell them that, captain Booth, let me tell them
‘ that.’

‘ I see, sir,’ answered Booth a little discomposed,
‘ that you are acquainted with my title as well as
‘ my name.’

‘ Ay, sir,’ cries the keeper, ‘ and I honour you
‘ the more for it. I love the gentlemen of the
‘ army. I was in the army myself formerly; in
‘ the lord of Oxford’s horse. It is true I rode pri-
‘ vate; but I had money enough to have bought
‘ in quarter-master, when I took it into my head
‘ to marry, and my wife she did not like that I
‘ should continue a foldier, she was all for a private
‘ life; and so I came to this business.’

‘ Upon my word, sir,’ answered Booth, ‘ you
‘ consulted your wife’s inclinations very notably;
‘ but pray, will you satisfy my curiosity in telling
‘ me how you became acquainted that I was in the
‘ army? for my dress, I think, could not betray me.’

‘ Betray!’ replied the keeper, ‘ there is no be-
‘ traying here, I hope—I am not a person to betray
‘ people.—But you are so shy and peery, you would
‘ almost make one suspect there was more in the
‘ matter. And if there be, I promise you, you
‘ need not be afraid of telling it me. You will ex-
‘ cuse me giving you a hint; but the sooner the bet-
‘ ter, that’s all. Others may be before-hand with
‘ you, and first come first served on these occasions,
‘ that’s all. Informers are odious, there’s no doubt
‘ of that, and no one would care to be an informer
‘ if he could help it, because of the ill usage they
‘ always receive from the mob; yet it is dangerous
‘ to trust too much; and when safety and a good
‘ part of the reward too are on one side, and the
‘ gallows on the other—I know which a wise man
‘ would chuse.’

‘ What the devil do you mean by all this?’ cries
Booth.

‘ No offence, I hope,’ answered the keeper; ‘ I
‘ speak for your good, and if you have been upon
‘ the

‘ the snaffling lay — you understand me, I am sure.’

‘ Not I,’ answered Booth, ‘ upon my honour.’

‘ Nay, nay,’ replied the keeper, with a contemptuous sneer, ‘ if you are so peery as that comes to, you must take the consequence.—But for my part, I know I would not trust Robinson with two-pence untold.’

‘ What do you mean,’ cries Booth? ‘ who is Robinson?’

‘ And you don’t know Robinson!’ answered the keeper with great emotion. To which Booth replying in the negative; the keeper after some tokens of amazement, cried out; ‘ well, captain, I must say you are the best at it, of all the gentlemen I ever saw. However, I will tell you this: the lawyer and Mr. Robinson have been laying their heads together about you above half an hour this afternoon. I overheard them mention Captain Booth several times; and for my part, I would not answer that Mr. Murphy is not now gone about the business; but if you will impeach any to me of the road, or any thing else, I will step away to his worship Thrasher this instant, and I am sure I have interest enough with him to get you admitted an evidence.’

‘ And so,’ cries Booth, ‘ you really take me for a highwayman.’

‘ No offence, captain, I hope,’ said the keeper: ‘ as times go, there are many worse men in the world than those. Gentlemen may be driven to distress, and when they are, I know no more genteeler way than the road. It hath been many a brave man’s case, to my knowledge, and men of as much honour too as any in the world.’

‘ Well, sir,’ said Booth, ‘ I assure you I am not that gentleman of honour you imagine me.’

Miss Matthews, who had long understood the keeper no better than Mr. Booth, no sooner heard his meaning explained, than she was fired with greater indignation than the gentleman had expressed. ‘ How dare you, sir,’ said she to the keeper, insult a man

‘ of

‘ of fashion, and who hath had the honour to bear
‘ his majesty’s commission in the army, as you your-
‘ self own you know? If his misfortunes have sent
‘ him hither, sure we have no laws that will protect
‘ such a fellow as you in insulting him?’ Fellow!’
muttered the keeper—‘ I would not advise you,
‘ madam, to use such language to me.’—‘ Do you
‘ dare threaten me,’ replied Miss Matthews in a rage;
‘ Venture in the least instance to exceed your author-
‘ ity, with regard to me, and I will prosecute you
‘ with the utmost vengeance.’

A scene of very high altercation now ensued, till Booth interposed, and quieted the keeper, who was, perhaps, enough inclined to an accommodation; for, in truth, he waged unequal war. He was besides unwilling to incense Miss Matthews, whom he expected to be bailed out the next day, and who had more money left than he intended she should carry out of the prison with her; and as for any violent or unjustifiable methods, the lady had discovered much too great a spirit to be in danger of them. The governor therefore, in a very gentle tone, declared, that if he had given any offence to the gentleman, he heartily asked his pardon; that if he had known him to be really a captain, he should not have entertained any such suspicions; but the captain was a very common title in that place, and belonged to several gentlemen that had never been in the army, or at most had rid private like himself. ‘ To be sure, captain,’ said he, ‘ as
‘ you yourself own, your dress is not very mili-
‘ tary;’ (for he had on a plain fustian suit) ‘ and be-
‘ sides, as the lawyer says, *nos citur a sosir* is a very
‘ good rule. And I don’t believe there is a greater
‘ rascal upon earth than that same Robinson that
‘ I was talking of. Nay, I assure you, I wish
‘ there may be no mischief hatching against you.
‘ But if there is, I will do all I can with the lawyer
‘ to prevent it. To be sure Mr. Murphy is one of
‘ the cleverest men in the world at the law: that
‘ even his enemies must own; and as I recommend
‘ him to all the business I can, (and it is not a little
‘ to

‘ to be sure that arises in this place) why, one good
 ‘ turn deserves another. And I may expect that
 ‘ he will not be concerned in any plot to ruin any
 ‘ friend of mine; at least when I desire him not.
 ‘ I am sure he could not be an honest man if he
 ‘ would.’

Booth was then satisfied that Mr. Robinson, whom he did not yet know by name, was the gamester who had won his money at play. And now, Miss Matthews, who had very impatiently borne this long interruption, prevailed on the keeper to withdraw. As soon as he was gone, Mr. Booth began to felicitate her upon the news of the wounded gentleman being in a fair likelihood of recovery. To which, after short silence, she answered, ‘ there is something, perhaps, which you will not easily guess, that makes your congratulation more agreeable to me than the first account I heard of the villain’s having escaped the fate he deserves: for, I do assure you, at first, it did not make me amends for the interruption of my curiosity. Now, I hope, we shall be disturbed no more, till you have finished your whole story.—You left off, I think, somewhere in the struggle about leaving Amelia, the happy Amelia.’—‘ And can you call her happy at such a period,’ cries Booth? ‘ Happy, ay, happy, in any situation,’ answered Miss Matthews, ‘ with such a husband. I, at least, may well think so, who have experienced the very reverse of her fortune; but I was not born to be happy. I may say with the poet:

“ The blackest ink of fate was sure my lot,

“ And when fate writ my name, it made a blot.

‘ Nay, nay, dear Miss Matthews,’ answered Booth, ‘ you must, and shall banish such gloomy thoughts. Fate hath, I hope, many happy days in store for you.’——‘ Do you believe it, Mr. Booth,’ replied she, ‘ indeed you know the contrary—You must know—For you can’t have forgot. No Amelia in the world can have quite obliterated—Forgetfulness is not in our own power. If it was, indeed, I have
 ‘ reason

‘ reason to think—But I know not what I am saying.

‘ —Pray do, proceed in that story.’

Booth so immediately complied with this request, that it is possible he was pleased with it. To say the truth, if all which unwittingly dropt from Miss Matthews was put together, some conclusions might, it seems, be drawn from the whole, which could not convey a very agreeable idea to a constant husband. Booth therefore proceeded to relate what is written in the third book of this history.

A M E L I A.

A M E L I A.

B O O K III.

C H A P. I.

In which Mr. Booth resumes his story.

‘ I F I am not mistaken, madam,’ continued Booth,
‘ I was just going to acquaint you with the
‘ doctor’s opinion, when we were interrupted by the
‘ keeper.

‘ The doctor having heard counsel on both sides,
‘ that is to say, Mrs. Harris for my staying, and
‘ Miss Betty for my going, at last delivered his own
‘ sentiments. As for Amelia, she sat silent, drown-
‘ ed in her tears ; nor was I myself in a much better
‘ situation.

“ As the commissions are not signed,” ‘ said the
‘ doctor,’ “ I think you may be said to remain in
“ your former regiment ; and therefore I think you
“ ought to go on this expedition ; your duty to your
“ king and country, whose bread you have eaten,
“ requires it ; and this is a duty of too high a
“ nature to admit the least deficiency. Regard to
“ your character likewise requires you to go : for
“ the world, which might justly blame your staying
“ at home if the case was even fairly stated, will
“ not deal so honestly by you : you must expect to
“ have every circumstance against you heightened,
“ and most of what makes for your defence omit-
“ ted ; and thus you will be stigmatized as a coward,
“ without any palliation. As the malicious dispo-
“ sition of mankind is too well known, and the cruel
“ pleasure

“ pleasure which they take in destroying the repu-
“ tations of others ; the use we are to make of this
“ knowledge is to afford no handle to reproach : for,
“ bad as the world is, it seldom falls on any man
“ who hath not given some slight cause for censure,
“ though this, perhaps, is often aggravated ten
“ thousand fold ; and when we blame the malice
“ of the aggravation, we ought not to forget our
“ own imprudence in giving the occasion. Remem-
“ ber, my boy, your honour is at stake ; and you
“ know how nice the honour of a soldier is in these
“ cases. This is a treasure, which he must be your
“ enemy indeed who would attempt to rob you of.
“ Therefore you ought to consider every one as
“ your enemy, who, by desiring you to stay, would
“ rob you of your honour.”

“ Do you hear that, sister ?” ‘ cries Miss Betty,’—
“ Yes, I do hear it,” ‘ answered Amelia, with more
‘ spirit than I ever saw her exert before,’ “ and
“ would preserve his honour at the expence of my
“ life. I will preserve it, if it should be at that
“ expence ; and since it is Dr. Harrison’s opinion
“ that he ought to go, I give my consent. Go, my dear
“ husband,” cried she, falling upon her knees ; “ may
“ every angel of heaven guard and preserve you.”—
‘ I cannot repeat her words without being affected,’
said he, wiping his eyes, ‘ the excellence of that
‘ woman, no words can paint ; Miss Matthews, she
‘ hath every perfection in human nature.

‘ I will not tire you with the repetition of any
‘ more that past on that occasion ; nor with the
‘ quarrel that ensued between Mrs. Harris and the
‘ doctor ; for the old lady could not submit to my
‘ leaving her daughter in her present condition. She
‘ fell severely on the army, and cursed the day in
‘ which her daughter was married to a soldier, not
‘ sparing the doctor for having had some share in
‘ the match. I will omit likewise the tender scene
‘ which past between Amelia and myself previous
‘ to my departure.

‘ Indeed

‘ Indeed I beg you would not,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ nothing delights me more than scenes of tenderness. I should be glad to know, if possible, every syllable which was uttered on both sides.’

‘ I will indulge you then,’ cries Booth, ‘ as far as is in my power. Indeed, I believe, I am able to recollect much the greatest part ; for the impression is never to be effaced from my memory.’

He then proceeded as Miss Matthews desired ; but lest all our readers should not be of her opinion, we will, according to our usual custom, endeavour to accommodate ourselves to every taste, and shall therefore place this scene in a chapter by itself, which we desire all our readers who do not love, or who perhaps do not know the pleasure of tenderness, to pass over ; since they may do this without any prejudice to the thread of the narrative.

C H A P. II.

Containing a scene of the tender kind.

‘ **T**HE doctor, madam,’ continued Booth, ‘ spent his evening at Mrs. Harris’s house, where I sat with him whilst he smoked his pillow pipe, as his phrase is. Amelia was retired above half an hour to her chamber, before I went to her. At my entrance, I found her on her knees, a posture in which I never disturbed her. In a few minutes she arose, came to me, and embracing me, said, she had been praying for resolution to support the cruellest moment she had ever undergone, or could possibly undergo. I reminded her how much more bitter a farewell would be on a death-bed, when we never could meet, in this world at least, again. I then endeavoured to lessen all those objects which alarmed her most, and particularly the danger I was to encounter ; upon which head I seemed a little to comfort her ;—but the probable length of my absence, and the certain length of my voyage, were circumstances which no oratory of mine could even palliate.’ ‘ Oh ! heavens,’ said she, bursting into tears, ‘ can I bear to think that hundreds, thousands,

“ thousands, for ought I know, of miles or leagues,
“ that lands and seas are between us. What is the
“ prospect from that mount in our garden, where
“ I have sat so many happy hours with my Billy?
“ what is the distance between that and the farthest
“ hill which we see from thence, compared to the
“ distance which will be between us? you cannot
“ wonder at this idea; you must remember, my
“ Billy, at this place, this very thought came for-
“ merly into my foreboding mind. I then begged
“ you to leave the army. Why would you not com-
“ ply? did I not tell you then that the smallest cottage
“ we could survey from the mount, would be with
“ you a paradise to me; it would be so still, why
“ can't my Billy think so? am I so much his su-
“ perior in love? where is the dishonour, Billy? or
“ if there be any, will it reach our ears in our little
“ hut? are glory and fame, and not his Amelia,
“ the happiness of my husband? go then, purchase
“ them at my expence. You will pay a few sighs,
“ perhaps a few tears at parting, and then new
“ scenes will drive away the thoughts of poor Ame-
“ lia from your bosom; but what assistance shall I
“ have in my affliction? not that any change of
“ scene could drive you one moment from my re-
“ membrance; yet here every object I behold will
“ place your loved idea in the liveliest manner be-
“ fore my eyes. This is the bed in which you
“ have reposed; that is the chair on which you sat.
“ Upon these boards you have stood. These books
“ you have read to me. Can I walk among our beds
“ of flowers, without viewing your favourites, nay,
“ those which you have planted with your own hands?
“ can I see one beauty from our beloved mount, which
“ you have not pointed out to me?”—“ Thus she
“ went on, the woman, madam, you see still pre-
“ vailing.”—“ Since you mention it,” says Miss Mat-
“ thews, with a smile, “ I own the same observation
“ occurred to me. It is too natural to us to consider
“ ourselves only, Mr. Booth.”—“ You shall hear,” he
“ cried,—“ At last, the thoughts of her present con-
“ dition suggested themselves.”—“ But if,” said

she, “ my situation, even in health, will be so intolerable, how shall I, in the danger and agonies of child-birth, support your absence ! ” — “ Here she stopped, and looking on me with all the tenderness imaginable, cried out, ’ And am I then such a wretch to wish for your presence at such a season ? ought I not to rejoice that you are out of the hearing of my cries, or the knowledge of my pains ? if I die, will you not have escaped the horrors of a parting, ten thousand times more dreadful than this ? go, go, my Billy ; the very circumstance which made me most dread your departure, hath perfectly reconciled me to it. I perceive clearly now that I was only wishing to support my own weakness with your strength, and to relieve my own pains at the price of yours. Believe me, my love, I am ashamed of myself. ” — “ I caught her in my arms with raptures not to be expressed in words, called her my heroine ; sure none ever better deserved that name ; after which we remained for some time speechless, and locked in each other’s embraces. ” — “ I am convinced, ” said Miss Matthews, with a sigh, “ there are moments in life worth purchasing with worlds. ” —

“ At length the fatal morning came. I endeavoured to hide every pang of my heart, and to wear the utmost gaiety in my countenance. Amelia acted the same part. In these assumed characters we met the family at breakfast ; at their breakfast, I mean : for we were both full already. The doctor had spent above an hour that morning in discourse with Mrs. Harris, and had in some measure reconciled her to my departure. He now made use of every art to relieve the poor distressed Amelia ; not by inveighing against the folly of grief, or by seriously advising her not to grieve ; both which were sufficiently performed by Miss Betty. The doctor, on the contrary, had recourse to every means which might cast a veil over the idea of grief, and raise comfortable images in my angel’s mind. He endeavoured to lessen the supposed length of my absence, by discoursing on matters which were more distant

‘ distant in time. He said, he intended next year to
‘ rebuild a part of his parsonage-house.—“ And you,
‘ “ captain,” says he, “ shall lay the corner-stone, I
‘ “ promise you,” with many other instances of the
‘ like nature, which produced, I believe, some good
‘ effect on us both.

‘ Amelia spoke but little; indeed more tears than
‘ words dropt from her; however, she seemed re-
‘ solved to bear her affliction with resignation. But
‘ when the dreadful news arrived that the horses were
‘ ready, and I, having taken my leave of all the rest,
‘ at last approached her; she was unable to support
‘ the conflict with nature any longer; and clinging
‘ round my neck, she cried,—“ Farewel, farewel for
‘ “ ever: for I shall never, never, see you more.” At
‘ which words the blood entirely forsook her lovely
‘ cheeks, and she became a lifeless corps in my arms.

‘ Amelia continued so long motionless, that the
‘ doctor, as well as Mrs. Harris, began to be under
‘ the most terrible apprehensions: so they informed
‘ me afterwards; for at that time I was incapable of
‘ making any observation. I had indeed very little
‘ more use of my senses than the dear creature whom
‘ I supported. At length, however, we were all de-
‘ livered from our fears; and life again visited the
‘ loveliest mansion that human nature ever afforded it.

‘ I had been, and yet was, so terrified with what
‘ had happened, and Amelia continued yet so weak
‘ and ill, that I determined, whatever might be the
‘ consequence, not to leave her that day: which re-
‘ solution she was no sooner acquainted with, than
‘ she fell on her knees, crying, good Heaven, I thank
‘ thee for this reprieve at least. Oh! that every hour
‘ of my future life could be crammed into this dear
‘ day.

‘ Our good friend the doctor remained with us.
‘ He said, he had intended to visit a family in some
‘ affliction; but I don’t know, says he, why I should
‘ ride a dozen miles after affliction, when we have
‘ enough here. Of all mankind the doctor is the
‘ best of comforters. As his excessive good-nature
‘ makes him take vast delight in the office; so his

‘ great penetration into the human mind, joined to
‘ his great experience, renders him the most wonder-
‘ ful proficient in it; and he so well knows when to
‘ sooth, when to reason, and when to ridicule, that
‘ he never applies any of those arts improperly,
‘ which is almost universally the case with the physi-
‘ cians of the mind, and which it requires very great
‘ judgment and dexterity to avoid.

‘ The doctor principally applied himself to ridicu-
‘ ling the dangers of the siege, in which he succeed-
‘ ed so well, that he sometimes forced a smile even
‘ into the face of Amelia. But what most comforted
‘ her, were the arguments he used to convince her of
‘ the probability of my speedy, if not immediate re-
‘ turn. He said, the general opinion was, that the
‘ place would be taken before our arrival there. In
‘ which case, we should have nothing more to do,
‘ than to make the best of our way home again.

‘ Amelia was so lulled by these arts, that she passed
‘ the day much better than I expected. Though the
‘ doctor could not make pride strong enough to con-
‘ quer love; yet, he exalted the former to make some
‘ stand against the latter; insomuch, that my poor
‘ Amelia, I believe, more than once, flattered her-
‘ self, to speak the language of the world, that her
‘ reason had gained an entire victory over her pas-
‘ sion; till love brought up a re-inforcement, if I
‘ may use that term, of tender ideas, and bore down
‘ all before him.

‘ In the evening, the doctor and I passed another
‘ half hour together, when he proposed to me to en-
‘ deavour to leave Amelia asleep in the morning, and
‘ promised me to be at hand when she awaked, and
‘ to support her with all the assistance in his power.
‘ He added, that nothing was more foolish, than for
‘ friends to take leave of each other. It is true, in-
‘ deed, says he, in the common acquaintance and
‘ friendship of the world, this is a very harmless ce-
‘ remony; but between two persons who really love
‘ each other, the church of Rome never invented a
‘ penance half so severe as this, which we absurdly
‘ impose on ourselves.

‘ I greatly approved the doctor’s proposal ; thank-
‘ ed him, and promised, if possible, to put it in exe-
‘ cution. He then shook me by the hand, and heartily
‘ wished me well, saying, in his blunt way ; “ Well,
“ boy, I hope to see thee crowned with laurels at thy
“ return ; one comfort I have, at least, that stone walls
“ and a sea will prevent thee from running away.”

‘ When I had left the doctor, I repaired to my
‘ Amelia, whom I found in her chamber, employed
‘ in a very different manner from what she had been
‘ the preceding night ; she was busy in packing up
‘ some trinkets in a casket, which she desired me to
‘ carry with me. This casket was her own work,
‘ and she had just fastened it as I came to her.

‘ Her eyes very plainly discovered what had pas-
‘ sed while she was engaged in her work ; however,
‘ her countenance was now serene, and she spoke,
‘ at least, with some cheerfulness. But after some
‘ time, “ You must take care of this casket, Billy,”
said she,—“ You must indeed, Billy—for”—here
‘ passion almost choked her, till a flood of tears
‘ gave her relief, and then she proceeded—“ For I
“ shall be the happiest woman that ever was born
“ when I see it again.”—I told her, with the blessing
‘ of God that day would soon come.’ “ Soon !” an-
swered she,—“ No, Billy, not soon ; a week is an
“ age :—but yet the happy day may come. It
“ shall, it must, it will !---Yes, Billy, we shall meet,
“ never to part again :---even in this world I hope.”---
‘ Pardon my weakness, Miss Matthews, but upon my
‘ soul I cannot help it.’ cried he, wiping his eyes---
‘ Well, I wonder at your patience, and I will try it no
‘ longer. Amelia, tired out with so long a struggle
‘ between variety of passions, and having not closed
‘ her eyes during three successive nights, towards the
‘ morning fell into a profound sleep. In which sleep
‘ I left her---and having dressed myself with all the ex-
‘ pedition imaginable, singing, whistling, hurrying,
‘ attempting by every method to banish thought, I
‘ mounted my horse, which I had over-night order-
‘ ed to be ready, and galloped away from that house
‘ where all my treasure was deposited.

‘ Thus, madam, I have, in obedience to your commands, run through a scene, which, if it hath been tiresome to you, you must yet acquit me of having obtruded upon you. This I am convinced of, that no one is capable of tasting such a scene, who hath not a heart full of tendernefs, and perhaps not even then, unless he hath been in the same situation.’

C H A P. III.

In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his journey.

‘ **W**ELL, madam, we have now taken our leave of Amelia. I rode a full mile before I once suffered myself to look back ; but now being come to the top of a little hill, the last spot I knew which could give me a prospect of Mrs. Harris’s house, my resolution failed ; I stopt and cast my eyes backward. Shall I tell you what I felt at that instant ? I do assure you I am not able. So many tender ideas crowded at once into my mind, that, if I may use the expression, they almost dissolved my heart. And now, madam, the most unfortunate accident came first into my head. This was, that I had in the hurry and confusion left the dear casket behind me. The thought of going back at first suggested itself ; but the consequences of that were too apparent. I therefore resolved to send my man, and in the mean time to ride on softly on my road. He immediately executed my orders, and after some time, feeding my eyes with that delicious and yet heart-felt prospect, I at last turned my horse to descend the hill, and proceeded about a hundred yards, when, considering with myself, that I should lose no time by a second indulgence, I again turned back, and once more feasted my sight with the same painful pleasure, till my man returned, bringing me the casket, and an account that Amelia still continued in the sweet sleep I left her.---I now suddenly turned my horse for the last time, and with the utmost resolution pursued my journey.

‘ I per-

‘ I perceived my man at his return—But before I
‘ mention any thing of him, it may be proper,
‘ madam, to acquaint you who he was. He was the
‘ foster-brother of my Amelia. This young fellow
‘ had taken it into his head to go into the army; and
‘ he was desirous to serve under my command. The
‘ doctor consented to discharge him; his mother at
‘ last yielded to his importunities; and I was very
‘ easily prevailed on to list one of the handsomest young
‘ fellows in England.

‘ You will easily believe I had some little partiality
‘ to one whose milk Amelia had sucked; but as he
‘ had never seen the regiment, I had no opportunity
‘ to shew him any great mark of favour. Indeed he
‘ waited on me as my servant; and I treated him with
‘ all the tendernefs which can be used to one in that
‘ station.

‘ When I was about to change into the horse-
‘ guards, the poor fellow began to droop, fearing
‘ that he should no longer be in the same corps with
‘ me, though certainly that would not have been the
‘ case. However, he had never mentioned one word
‘ of his dissatisfaction.—He is indeed a fellow of a
‘ noble spirit; but when he heard that I was to re-
‘ main where I was, and that we were to go to
‘ Gibraltar together, he fell into transports of joy,
‘ little short of madness. In short, the poor fellow
‘ had imbibed a very strong affection for me; though
‘ this was what I knew nothing of till long after.

‘ When he returned to me then, as I was saying,
‘ with the casket, I observed his eyes all over blub-
‘ bered with tears. I rebuked him a little too rashly
‘ on this occasion. Heyday! says I, what is the
‘ meaning of this; I hope I have not a milk-fop with
‘ me. If I thought you would shew such a face to the
‘ enemy I would leave you behind.—Your honour need
‘ not fear that, answered he; I shall find no body there
‘ that I shall love well enough to make me cry. I was
‘ highly pleased with this answer, in which I thought
‘ I could discover both sense and spirit. I then asked
‘ him what had occasioned those tears since he had left
‘ me; (for he had no sign of any at that time) and

‘ whether he had seen his mother at Mrs. Harris’s.
‘ He answered in the negative, and begged that I would
‘ ask him no more questions ; adding, that he was not
‘ very apt to cry, and he hoped he should never give
‘ me such another opportunity of blaming him. I men-
‘ tion this only as an instance of his affection towards
‘ me ; for I never could account for those tears, any
‘ otherwise than by placing them to the account of
‘ that distress in which he left me at that time. We
‘ travelled full forty miles that day without baiting,
‘ when arriving at the inn where I intended to rest
‘ that night, I retired immediately to my chamber,
‘ with my dear Amelia’s casket, the opening of which
‘ was the nicest repast, and to which every other hun-
‘ ger gave way.

‘ It is impossible to mention to you all the little
‘ matters with which Amelia had furnished this casket.
‘ It contained medicines of all kinds, which her mo-
‘ ther, who was the Lady Bountiful of that country,
‘ had supplied her with. The most valuable of all to
‘ me was a lock of her dear hair, which I have from
‘ that time to this worn in my bosom. What would
‘ I have then given for a little picture of my dear
‘ angel, which she had lost from her chamber about a
‘ month before ? and which we had the highest reason
‘ in the world to imagine her sister had taken away :
‘ for the suspicion lay only between her and Amelia’s
‘ maid, who was of all creatures the honestest, and
‘ whom her mistress had often trusted with things of
‘ much greater value : for the picture, which was set
‘ in gold, and had two or three little diamonds round
‘ it, was worth about twelve guineas only ; whereas
‘ Amelia left jewels in her care of much greater
‘ value.’

‘ Sure,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ she could not be
‘ such a paultry pilferer.’

‘ Not on account of the gold or the jewels,’ cries
Booth. ‘ We imputed it to mere spite, with which
‘ I assure you she abounds ; and she knew that next to
‘ Amelia herself, there was nothing which I valued
‘ so much as this little picture : for such a resemblance
‘ did it bear of the original, that Hogarth himself did
‘ never

‘ never, I believe, draw a stronger likeness. Spite
‘ therefore was the only motive to this cruel depre-
‘ dation ; and indeed her behaviour on the occasion
‘ sufficiently convinced us both of the justice of our
‘ suspicion, though we neither of us durst accuse her ;
‘ and she herself had the assurance to insist very strongly
‘ (though she could not prevail) with Amelia to turn
‘ away her innocent maid, saying, she would not live
‘ in the house with a thief.’

Miss Matthews now discharged some curses on Miss Betty, not much worth repeating, and then Mr. Booth proceeded in his relation.

C H A P. IV.

A sea-piece.

‘ **T** H E next day we joined the regiment, which
‘ was soon after to embark. Nothing but mirth
‘ and jollity were in the countenance of every officer
‘ and soldier ; and as I now met several friends whom
‘ I had not seen for above a year before, I passed se-
‘ veral happy hours, in which poor Amelia’s image
‘ seldom obtruded itself to interrupt my pleasure. To
‘ confess the truth, dear Miss Matthews, the tenderest
‘ of passions is capable of subsiding ; nor is absence
‘ from our dearest friends so unsupportable as it may
‘ at first appear. Distance of time and place do really
‘ cure what they seem to aggravate ; and taking leave
‘ of our friends resembles taking leave of the world ;
‘ concerning which it hath been often said, that it is
‘ not death, but dying which is terrible.’—Here Miss
Matthews burst into a fit of laughter, and cried, ‘ I
‘ sincerely ask your pardon ; but I cannot help laugh-
‘ ing at the gravity of your philosophy.’ Booth an-
swered, that the doctrine of the passions had been al-
ways his favourite study ; that he was convinced
every man acted entirely from that passion which
was uppermost ; ‘ Can I then think,’ said he, ‘ with-
‘ out entertaining the utmost contempt for myself,
‘ that any pleasure upon earth could drive the thoughts
‘ of Amelia one instant from my mind ?’

At length we embarked aboard a transport, and sailed for Gibraltar; but the wind, which was at first fair, soon chopped about; so that we were obliged, for several days, to beat to windward, as the sea phrase is. During this time, the taste which I had of a sea-faring life did not appear extremely agreeable. We rolled up and down in a little narrow cabin, in which were three officers, all of us extremely sea-sick; our sickness being much aggravated by the motion of the ship, by the view of each other, and by the stench of the men. But this was but a little taste indeed of the misery which was to follow: for we were got about six leagues to the westward of Scilly, when a violent storm arose at north-east, which soon raised the waves to the height of mountains. The horror of this is not to be adequately described to those who have never seen the like. The storm began in the evening, and as the clouds brought on the night apace, it was soon entirely dark; nor had we, during many hours, any other light than what was caused by the jarring elements, which frequently sent forth flashes, or rather streams of fire; and whilst these presented the most dreadful objects to our eyes, the roaring of the winds, the dashing of the waves against the ship and each other, formed a sound altogether as horrible for our ears; while our ship, sometimes lifted up as it were to the skies, and sometimes swept away at once as into the lowest abyss, seemed to be the sport of the winds and seas. The captain himself almost gave all for lost, and expressed his apprehension of being inevitably cast on the rocks of Scilly, and beat to pieces. And now, while some on board were addressing themselves to the supreme being, and others applying for comfort to strong liquors, my whole thoughts were entirely engaged by my Amelia. A thousand tender ideas crowded into my mind. I can truly say, that I had not a single consideration about myself, in which she was not concerned. Dying to me was leaving her; and the fear of never seeing her more, was a dagger stuck in my heart. Again, all the terrors with which this storm, if it reach-

‘ reached her ears, must fill her gentle mind on my
‘ account, and the agonies which she must undergo,
‘ when she heard of my fate, gave me such intolerable
‘ pangs, that I now repented my resolution, and wished,
‘ I own I wished, that I had taken her advice, and
‘ preferred love and a cottage to all the dazzling
‘ charms of honour.

‘ While I was tormenting myself with these me-
‘ ditations, and had concluded myself as certainly
‘ lost, the master came into the cabin, and with a
‘ chearful voice, assured us that we had escaped the
‘ danger, and that we had certainly past to the west-
‘ ward of the rock. This was comfortable news to
‘ all present ; and my captain, who had been some
‘ time on his knees, leapt suddenly up, and testified
‘ his joy with a great oath.

‘ A person unused to the sea would have been
‘ astonished at the satisfaction which now discovered
‘ itself in the master or in any on board : for the
‘ storm still raged with great violence, and the day-
‘ light which now appeared, presented us with sights
‘ of horror sufficient to terrify minds which were not
‘ absolute slaves to the passion of fear ; but so great is
‘ the force of habit, that what inspires a landman
‘ with the highest apprehension of danger, gives not
‘ the least concern to a sailor, to whom rocks and
‘ quick-sands are almost the only objects of terror.

‘ The master, however, was a little mistaken in the
‘ present instance ; for he had not left the cabin above
‘ an hour, before my man came running to me, and
‘ acquainted me that the ship was half full of water ;
‘ that the sailors were going to hoist out the boat and
‘ save themselves, and begged me to come that mo-
‘ ment along with him, as I tendered my preservation.
‘ With this account, which was conveyed to me in a
‘ whisper, I acquainted both the captain and ensign ;
‘ and we all together immediately mounted the deck,
‘ where we found the master making use of all his ora-
‘ tory to persuade the sailors that the ship was in no
‘ danger ; and at the same time employed all his
‘ authority to set the pumps a-going, which he assured
‘ them would keep the water under, and save his

‘ dear Lovely Peggy, (for that was the name of
‘ the ship) which he swore he loved as dearly as his
‘ own soul.

‘ Indeed this sufficiently appeared ; for the leak was
‘ so great, and the water flowed in so plentifully, that
‘ his Lovely Peggy was half filled, before he could
‘ be brought to think of quitting her ; but now the
‘ boat was brought along-side the ship ; and the
‘ master himself, notwithstanding all his love for her,
‘ quitted his ship ; and leapt into the boat. Every
‘ man present attempted to follow his example, when
‘ I heard the voice of my servant roaring forth my
‘ name in a kind of agony. I made directly to the
‘ ship side, but was too late : for the boat, being al-
‘ ready over laden, put directly off. And now, ma-
‘ dam, I am going to relate to you an instance of
‘ heroic affection in a poor fellow towards his master,
‘ to which love itself, even among persons of superior
‘ education, can produce but few similar instances.
‘ My poor man being unable to get me with him into
‘ the boat, leapt suddenly into the sea, and swam
‘ back to the ship ; and when I gently rebuked him
‘ for his rashness, he answered, he chose rather to die
‘ with me, than to live to carry the account of my
‘ death to my Amelia ; at the same time bursting into
‘ a flood of tears, he cried, “ Good Heavens ! what
‘ will that poor lady feel when she hears of this !”
‘ This tender concern for my dear love endeared the
‘ poor fellow more to me than the gallant instance
‘ which he had just before given of his affection to-
‘ wards myself.

‘ And now, madam, my eyes were shocked with
‘ a sight, the horror of which can scarce be imagined :
‘ for the boat had scarce got four hundred yards from
‘ the ship, when it was swallowed up by the merciless
‘ waves, which now ran so high, that out of the num-
‘ ber of persons which were in the boat none reco-
‘ vered the ship ; though many of them we saw mise-
‘ rably perish before our eyes, some of them very
‘ near us, without any possibility of giving them the
‘ least assistance.

‘ But

‘ But whatever we felt for them, we felt, I believe,
‘ more for ourselves, expecting every minute when we
‘ should share the same fate. Among the rest, one of
‘ our officers appeared quite stupified with fear. I
‘ never indeed saw a more miserable example of the
‘ great power of that passion : I must not, however,
‘ omit doing him justice, by saying that I afterwards
‘ saw the same man behave well in an engagement, in
‘ which he was wounded. Though there likewise he
‘ was said to have betrayed the same passion of fear in
‘ his countenance.

‘ The other of our officers was no less stupified (if
‘ I may so express myself) with fool hardiness, and
‘ seemed almost insensible of his danger. To say the
‘ truth, I have, from this and some other instances
‘ which I have seen, been almost inclined to think,
‘ that the courage as well as cowardice of fools pro-
‘ ceeds from not knowing what is or what is not the
‘ proper object of fear : indeed, we may account for
‘ the extreme hardiness of some men, in the same
‘ manner as for the terrors of children at a bugbear.
‘ The child knows not but that the bugbear is the pro-
‘ per object of fear, the blockhead knows not that a
‘ cannon ball is so.

‘ As to the remaining part of the ship’s crew, and
‘ the soldiery, most of them were dead drunk ; and
‘ the rest were endeavouring, as fast as they could, to
‘ prepare for death in the same manner.

‘ In this dreadful situation we were taught that no
‘ human condition should inspire men with absolute
‘ despair : for as the storm had ceased for some time,
‘ the swelling of the sea began considerably to abate ;
‘ and we now perceived the man of war which con-
‘ voyed us, at no great distance a-stern. Those aboard
‘ her easily perceived our distress, and made towards
‘ us. When they came pretty near, they hoisted out
‘ two boats to our assistance. These no sooner ap-
‘ proached the ship, than they were instantaneously filled,
‘ and I myself got a place in one of them, chiefly by
‘ the aid of my honest servant, of whose fidelity to
‘ me on all occasions I cannot speak or think too
‘ highly. Indeed I got into the boat so much the
‘ more

‘ more easily as a great number on board the ship were
‘ rendered by drink incapable of taking any care for
‘ themselves. There was time, however, for the
‘ boat to pass and repass ; so that when we came to
‘ call over names, three only, of all that remained
‘ in the ship, after the loss of her own boat, were
‘ missing.

‘ The captain, ensign, and myself, were received
‘ with many congratulations by our officers on board
‘ the man of war.—The sea officers too, all except
‘ the captain, paid us their compliments, though
‘ these were of the rougher kind, and not without
‘ several jokes on our escape. As for the captain him-
‘ self, we scarce saw him during many hours ; and
‘ when he appeared, he presented a view of majesty
‘ beyond any that I had ever seen. The dignity which
‘ he preserved, did indeed give me rather the idea of
‘ a Mogul, or a Turkish emperor, than of any of the
‘ monarchs of Christendom. To say the truth, I
‘ could resemble his walk on the deck to nothing but
‘ to the image of Captain Gulliver strutting among the
‘ Lilliputians ; he seemed to think himself a being of
‘ an order superior to all around him, and more espe-
‘ cially to us of the land service. Nay, such was
‘ the behaviour of all the sea officers and sailors to
‘ us and our soldiers, that instead of appearing to
‘ be subjects of the same prince, engaged in one
‘ quarrel, and joined to support one cause ; we
‘ landmen rather seemed to be captives on board
‘ an enemy’s vessel. This is a grievous misfor-
‘ tune, and often proves so fatal to the service,
‘ that it is great pity some means could not be found
‘ of curing it.’

Here Mr. Booth stopt a while, to take breath.
We will therefore give the same refreshment to the
reader.

C H A P. V.

The arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him.

‘THE adventures,’ continued Booth, ‘which
‘ happened to me from this day till my arrival at Gibraltar, are not worth recounting to you.
‘ After a voyage, the remainder of which was tolerably prosperous, we arrived in that garrison, the natural strength of which is so well known to the
‘ whole world.

‘ About a week after my arrival, it was my fortune to be ordered on a sally-party, in which my left leg was broke with a musquet ball; and I should most certainly have either perished miserably, or must have owed my preservation to some of the enemy, had not my faithful servant carried me off on his shoulders, and afterwards, with the assistance of one of his comrades, brought me back into the garrison.

‘ The agony of my wound was so great, that it threw me into a fever, from whence my surgeon apprehended much danger. I now began again to feel for my Amelia, and for myself on her account: and the disorder of my mind occasioned by such melancholy contemplations, very highly aggravated the distemper of my body; insomuch, that it would probably have proved fatal, had it not been for the friendship of one Captain James, an officer of our regiment, and an old acquaintance, who is undoubtedly one of the pleasantest companions, and one of the best-natured men in the world. This worthy man, who had a head and a heart perfectly adequate to every office of friendship, stayed with me almost day and night during my illness; and by strengthening my hopes, raising my spirits, and cheering my thoughts, preserved me from destruction.

‘ The behaviour of this man alone is a sufficient proof of the truth of my doctrine, that all men act entirely from their passions; for Bob James can never be supposed to act from any motive of
‘ virtue

‘ virtue and religion ; since he constantly laughs at
‘ both ; and yet his conduct towards me alone de-
‘ monstrates a degree of goodness, which, perhaps,
‘ few of the votaries of either virtue or religion
‘ can equal.’

‘ You need not take much pains,’ answered Miss Matthews with a smile, ‘ to convince me of your
‘ doctrine. I have been always an advocate for the
‘ same. I look upon the two words you mention,
‘ to serve only as cloaks under which hypocrisy
‘ may be the better enabled to cheat the world. I
‘ have been of that opinion ever since I read that
‘ charming fellow Mandevil.’

‘ Pardon me, madam,’ answered Booth, ‘ I hope
‘ you do not agree with Mandevil neither, who
‘ hath represented human nature in a picture of the
‘ highest deformity. He hath left out of his system
‘ the best passion which the mind can possess, and
‘ attempts to derive the effects or energies of that
‘ passion, from the base impulses of pride or fear.
‘ Whereas, it is as certain that love exists in the mind
‘ of man, as that its opposite hatred doth, and the
‘ same reasons will equally prove the existence of
‘ the one as the existence of the other.’

‘ I don’t know, indeed,’ replied the lady, ‘ I never
‘ thought much about the matter. This I know,
‘ that when I read Mandevil, I thought all he said
‘ was true ; and I have been often told, that he
‘ proves religion and virtue to be only mere names.
‘ However, if he denies there is any such thing as
‘ love, that is most certainly wrong.—I am afraid I
‘ can give him the lye myself.’

‘ I will join with you, madam, in that,’ answered Booth, ‘ at any time.’

‘ Will you join with me ?’ answered she, looking eagerly at him—‘ O Mr. Booth, I know not what I
‘ was going to say—What—Where did you leave off ?
‘ —I would not interrupt you—but I am impatient
‘ to know something.’

‘ What, madam ?’ cries Booth, ‘ if I can give you
‘ any satisfaction’——

‘ No,

‘ No, no,’ said she, ‘ I must hear all, I would not for the world break the thread of your story — Besides, I am afraid to ask — Pray, pray, Sir, go on.’

‘ Well, madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ I think I was mentioning the extraordinary acts of friendship done me by Captain James ; nor can I help taking notice of the almost unparalleled fidelity of poor Atkinson (for that was my man’s name) who was not only constant in the assiduity of his attendance, but, during the time of my danger, demonstrated a concern for me which I can hardly account for, as my prevailing on his captain to make him a serjeant was the first favour he ever received at my hands, and this did not happen till I was almost perfectly recovered of my broken leg. Poor fellow ! I shall never forget the extravagant joy his halbert gave him ; I remember it the more, because it was one of the happiest days of my own life ; for it was upon this day that I received a letter from my dear Amelia, after a long silence, acquainting me that she was out of all danger from her lying-in.

‘ I was now once more able to perform my duty ; when (so unkind was the fortune of war) the second time I mounted the guard, I received a violent contusion from the bursting of a bomb. I was felled to the ground, where I lay breathless by the blow, till honest Atkinson came to my assistance, and conveyed me to my room, where a surgeon immediately attended me.

‘ The injury I had now received, was much more dangerous in my surgeon’s opinion than the former ; it caused me to spit blood, and was attended with a fever, and other bad symptoms ; so that very fatal consequences were apprehended.

‘ In this situation the image of my Amelia haunted me day and night ; and the apprehensions of never seeing her more were so intolerable, that I had thoughts of resigning my commission, and returning home, weak as I was, that I might have, at least, the satisfaction of dying in the arms of my love.

‘ Captain

‘ Captain James, however, persisted in dissuading me
 ‘ from any such resolution. He told me my honour
 ‘ was too much concerned, attempted to raise my
 ‘ hopes of recovery to the utmost of his power; but
 ‘ chiefly he prevailed on me by suggesting, that if
 ‘ the worst which I apprehended, should happen, it
 ‘ was much better for Amelia, that she should be
 ‘ absent than present in so melancholy an hour.’
 ‘ I know,” cried he, “ the extreme joy which must
 ‘ arise in you from meeting again with Amelia,
 ‘ and the comfort of expiring in her arms; but con-
 ‘ sider what she herself must endure upon the dread-
 ‘ ful occasion, and you would not wish to purchase
 ‘ any happiness at the price of so much pain to her.”
 ‘ This argument, at length, prevailed on me; and
 ‘ it was after many long debates resolved, that she
 ‘ should not even know my present condition till
 ‘ my doom either for life or death was absolutely
 ‘ fixed.’

‘ Oh! Heavens! how great! how generous!”
 cried Miss Matthews. ‘ Booth, thou art a noble
 ‘ fellow; and I scarce think there is a woman upon
 ‘ earth worthy so exalted a passion.’

Booth made a modest answer to the compliment
 which Miss Matthews had paid him. This drew
 more civilities from the lady; and these again more
 acknowledgments. All which we shall pass by, and
 proceed with our history.

C H A P. VI.

Containing matters which will please some readers.

‘ T W O months and more, had I continued in
 ‘ a state of incertainty, sometimes with more
 ‘ flattering, and sometimes with more alarming symp-
 ‘ toms; when one afternoon poor Atkinson came
 ‘ running into my room, all pale and out of breath,
 ‘ and begged me not to be surprized at his news.
 ‘ I asked him eagerly what was the matter, and if
 ‘ it was any thing concerning Amelia.—I had scarce
 ‘ uttered the dear name, when she herself rushed into
 ‘ the

‘ the room, and ran hastily to me, crying,’ “ Yes,
“ it is, it is your Amelia herself.”

‘ There is nothing so difficult to describe, and
‘ generally so dull when described, as scenes of ex-
‘ cessive tendernefs.’

‘ Can you think so ?’ says Miss Matthews, ‘ surely
‘ there is nothing so charming !—O ! Mr. Booth,
‘ our sex is d—ned by the want of tendernefs in
‘ yours—O were they all like you—certainly no man
‘ was ever your equal.’

‘ Indeed, madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ you honour me
‘ too much—But—well—when the first transports
‘ of our meeting were over, Amelia began gently
‘ to chide me for having concealed my illness from
‘ her ; for in three letters which I had writ her since
‘ the accident had happened, there was not the least
‘ mention of it, or any hint given by which she
‘ could possibly conclude I was otherwise than in
‘ perfect health. And when I had excused myself,
‘ by assigning the true reason, she cried,—“ O Mr.
“ Booth ! and do you know so little of your Amelia,
“ as to think I could or would survive you !—would
“ it not be better for one dreadful sight to break my
“ heart all at once, than to break it by degrees ?—
“ O Billy ! can any thing pay me for the loss of
“ this embrace”——“ But I ask your pardon——
‘ how ridiculous doth my fondnefs appear in your
‘ eyes !’

‘ How often,’ answered she, ‘ shall I assert the
‘ contrary ?——What would you have me say, Mr.
‘ Booth ? shall I tell you I envy Mrs. Booth of all
‘ the women in the world ? would you believe me if
‘ I did ? I hope you—What am I saying !—Pray
‘ make no farther apology, but go on.’

‘ After a scene,’ continued he, ‘ too tender to be
‘ conceived by many, Amelia informed me that she
‘ had received a letter from an unknown hand,
‘ acquainting her with my misfortune, and advising
‘ her, if she ever desired to see me more, to come
‘ directly to Gibraltar. She said, she should not
‘ have delayed a moment after receiving this letter,
‘ had not the same ship brought her one from me
‘ written

‘ written with rather more than usual gaiety, and
‘ in which there was not the least mention of my
‘ indisposition. This, she said, greatly puzzled her
‘ and her mother, and the worthy divine endeavoured
‘ to persuade her to give credit to my letter, and
‘ to impute the other to a species of wit with which
‘ the world greatly abounds. This consists entirely
‘ in doing various kinds of mischief to our fellow-
‘ creatures; by belying one, deceiving another, ex-
‘ posing a third, and drawing in a fourth to expose
‘ himself; in short, by making some the objects of
‘ laughter, others of contempt; and indeed, not sel-
‘ dom, by subjecting them to very great inconveni-
‘ ces, perhaps to ruin, for the sake of a jest.

‘ Mrs. Harris and the doctor derived the letter
‘ from this species of wit. Miss Betty, however, was
‘ of a different opinion, and advised poor Amelia to
‘ apply to an officer whom the governor had sent
‘ over in the same ship, by whom the report of my
‘ illness was so strongly confirmed, that Amelia im-
‘ mediately resolved on her voyage.

‘ I had a great curiosity to know the author of
‘ this letter; but not the least trace of it could be
‘ discovered. The only person with whom I lived
‘ in any great intimacy was Captain James; and he,
‘ madam, from what I have already told you, you
‘ will think to be the last person I could suspect;
‘ besides, he declared upon his honour, that he knew
‘ nothing of the matter; and no man’s honour is,
‘ I believe, more sacred. There was indeed an ensign
‘ of another regiment who knew my wife, and who
‘ had sometimes visited me in my illness; but he was
‘ a very unlikely man to interest himself much in any
‘ affairs which did not concern him; and he too
‘ declared he knew nothing of it.’

‘ And did you never discover this secret?’ cried
Miss Matthews.

‘ Never to this day,’ answered Booth.

‘ I fancy,’ said she, ‘ I could give a shrewd guess.
‘ —What so likely as that Mrs. Booth, when you
‘ left her, should have given her foster-brother orders
‘ to send her word of whatever befel you?—Yet stay
‘ —that

‘ —that could not be neither: for then she would
‘ not have doubted whether she should leave dear
‘ England on the receipt of the letter.—No, it must
‘ have been by some other means;—yet that I owned
‘ appeared extremely natural to me; for if I had been
‘ left by such a husband, I think I should have pur-
‘ sued the same method.’

‘ No, madam,’ cried Booth, ‘ it must have been
‘ conveyed by some other channel; for my Amelia,
‘ I am certain, was entirely ignorant of the man-
‘ ner; and as for poor Atkinson, I am convinced he
‘ would not have ventured to take such a step without
‘ acquainting me. Besides, the poor fellow had, I
‘ believe, such a regard for my wife, out of gra-
‘ titude for the favours she had done his mother, that
‘ I make no doubt he was highly rejoiced at her
‘ absence from my melancholy scene. Well, whoever
‘ writ it, is a matter very immaterial; yet as it seemed
‘ so odd and unaccountable an incident, I could not
‘ help mentioning it.

‘ From the time of Amelia’s arrival, nothing re-
‘ markable happened till my perfect recovery, un-
‘ less I should observe her remarkable behaviour,
‘ so full of care and tenderness that it was perhaps
‘ without a parallel.’

‘ O no, Mr. Booth,’ cries the lady,—‘ It is fully
‘ equalled, I am sure, by your gratitude. There is
‘ nothing, I believe, so rare as gratitude in your sex,
‘ especially in husbands. So kind a remembrance is,
‘ indeed, more than a return to such an obligation:
‘ for where is the mighty obligation which a woman
‘ confers, who being possessed of an inestimable jewel
‘ is so kind to herself as to be careful and tender of
‘ it? I do not say this to lessen your opinion of
‘ Mrs. Booth. I have no doubt but that she loves
‘ you as well as she is capable. But I would not
‘ have you think so meanly of our sex, as to imagine
‘ there are not a thousand women susceptible of true
‘ tenderness towards a meritorious man.—Believe me,
‘ Mr. Booth, if I had received such an account of an
‘ accident having happened to such a husband, a
‘ mother and a parson would not have held me a
‘ moment,

‘ moment. I should have leaped into the first fishing-boat I could have found, and bid defiance to the winds and waves.—O there is no true tenderness but in a woman of spirit. I would not be understood all this while to reflect on Mrs. Booth. I am only defending the cause of my sex; for upon my soul such compliments to a wife are a satire on all the rest of womankind.’

‘ Sure you jest, Miss Matthews,’ answered Booth, with a smile. ‘ However, if you please, I will proceed in my story.’

C H A P. VII.

The captain continuing his story, recounts some particulars which we doubt not, to many good people, will appear unnatural.

‘ I WAS scarce sooner recovered from my indisposition than Amelia herself fell ill. This, I am afraid, was occasioned by the fatigues which I could not prevent her from undergoing on my account; for as my disease went off with violent sweats, during which the surgeon strictly ordered that I should lie by myself, my Amelia could not be prevailed upon to spend many hours in her own bed. During my restless fits she would sometimes read to me several hours together; indeed it was not without difficulty that she ever quitted my bed-side. These fatigues, added to the uneasiness of her mind, overpowered her weak spirits, and threw her into one of the worst disorders that can possibly attend a woman. A disorder very common among the ladies, and our physicians have not agreed upon its name. Some call it the fever on the spirits, some a nervous fever, some the vapours, and some the hysterics.’

‘ O say no more,’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ I pity you, I pity you from my soul. A man had better be plagued with all the curses of Egypt than with a vapourish wife.’

‘ Pity me, madam,’ answered Booth! ‘ pity rather that dear creature, who, from her love and care of
‘ my

‘ my unworthy self, contracted a distemper, the horrors of which are scarce to be imagined. It is indeed a sort of complication of all diseases together, with almost madness added to them. In this situation, the siege being at an end, the governor gave me leave to attend my wife to Montpelier, the air of which was judged to be most likely to restore her to health, Upon this occasion she wrote to her mother to desire a remittance, and set forth the melancholy condition of her health, and her necessity for money, in such terms as would have touched any bosom not void of humanity, though a stranger to the unhappy sufferer. Her sister answered it, and I believe I have a copy of the answer in my pocket. I keep it by me as a curiosity, and you would think it more so, could I shew you my Amelia’s letter. He then searched his pocket-book, and finding the letter, among many others, he read it in the following words :’

“ Dear sister,

“ **M**Y mamma being much disordered, hath commanded me to tell you, she is both shocked and surpris’d at your extraordinary request, or, as she chuses to call it, order for money. You know, my dear, she says, that your marriage with this red-coat man was entirely against her consent, and the opinion of all your family, (I am sure I may here include myself in that number) and yet after this fatal act of disobedience, she was prevailed on to receive you as her child ; not however, nor are you so to understand it, as the favourite which you was before. She forgave you ; but this was as a christian and a parent ; still preserving in her own mind a just sense of your disobedience, and a just resentment on that account. And yet, notwithstanding this resentment, she desires you to remember, that when you a second time ventured to oppose her authority, and nothing would serve you but taking a ramble (an indecent one I can’t help saying) after your fellow, she thought fit to shew
“ the

“ the excess of a mother’s tenderness, and furnished
“ you with no less than fifty pounds for your foolish
“ voyage. How can she then be otherwise than sur-
“ prised at your present demand? which, should she
“ be so weak to comply with, she must expect to be
“ every month repeated, in order to supply the ex-
“ travagance of a young rakish officer.—You say she
“ will compassionate your sufferings; yes, surely she
“ doth greatly compassionate them, and so do I too,
“ though you was neither so kind, nor so civil as to
“ suppose I should. But I forgive all your slights to
“ me, as well now as formerly. Nay, I not only
“ forgive, but I pray daily for you.—But, dear sister,
“ what could you expect less than what hath happen-
“ ed? you should have believed your friends, who
“ were wiser and older than you. I do not here mean
“ myself, though I own I am eleven months and some
“ odd weeks your superior; though, had I been
“ younger, I might, perhaps, have been able to ad-
“ vise you: for wisdom, and what some may call
“ beauty, do not always go together. You will
“ not be offended at this: for I know in your heart
“ you have always held your head above some peo-
“ ple, whom perhaps other people have thought
“ better of; but why do I mention what I scorn so
“ much?—No, my dear sister, Heaven forbid it
“ should ever be said of me, that I value myself upon
“ my face—not but if I could believe men perhaps
“ —but I hate and despise men—you know I do,
“ my dear, and I wish you had despised them as
“ much; but *jaeta est alea*, as the doctor says.—
“ You are to make the best of your fortune. What
“ fortune I mean my mamma may please to give
“ you: for you know all is in her power. Let me
“ advise you then to bring your mind to your cir-
“ cumstances, and remember (for I can’t help writ-
“ ing it, as it is for your own good) the vapours
“ are a distemper which very ill become a knapsack.
“ Remember, my dear, what you have done; remem-
“ ber what my mamma hath done; remember we
“ have something of yours to keep, and do not con-
“ sider

‘sider yourself as an only child.—No, nor as a,
‘favourite child; but be pleased to remember,

“ Dear sister,

“ Your most affectionate sister,

“ And most obedient humble servant,

“ E. HARRIS.”

‘ O brave Miss Betty,’ cried Miss Matthews, ‘ I
‘ always held her in high esteem; but I protest she
‘ exceeds even what I could have expected from
‘ her.’

‘ This letter, madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ you will
‘ believe was an excellent cordial for my poor wife’s
‘ spirits. So dreadful indeed was the effect it had
‘ upon her, that as she had read it in my absence,
‘ I found her at my return home in the most violent
‘ fits; and so long was it before she recovered her
‘ senses, that I despaired of that blest event ever hap-
‘ pening, and my own senses very narrowly escaped
‘ from being sacrificed to my despair. However, she
‘ came at last to herself, and I began to consider of
‘ every means of carrying her immediately to Mont-
‘ pelier, which was now become much more necessary
‘ than before.

‘ Though I was greatly shocked at the barbarity
‘ of the letter; yet I apprehended no very ill conse-
‘ quence from it; for as it was believed all over the
‘ army that I had married a great fortune, I had
‘ received offers of money, if I wanted it, from
‘ more than one. Indeed, I might have easily carried
‘ my wife to Montpelier at any time; but she was
‘ extremely averse to the voyage, being desirous of
‘ our returning to England, as I had leave to do;
‘ and she grew daily so much better, that had it
‘ not been for the receipt of that cursed—which I
‘ have just read to you, I am persuaded she might
‘ have been able to return to England in the next
‘ ship.

‘ Among others there was a colonel in the garrison,
‘ who had not only offered, but importuned me to
‘ receive money of him: I now therefore repaired to
‘ him

‘ him ; and as a reason of altering my resolution, I
‘ produced the letter, and at the same time ac-
‘ quainted him with the true state of my affairs.
‘ The colonel read the letter, shook his head, and
‘ after some silence, said, he was sorry I had refused
‘ to accept his offer before ; but that he had now
‘ so ordered matters, and disposed of his money,
‘ that he had not a shilling left to spare from his
‘ own occasions.

‘ Answers of the same kind I had from several
‘ others ; but not one penny could I borrow of any ;
‘ for I have been since firmly persuaded that the
‘ honest colonel was not content with denying me
‘ himself ; but took effectual means, by spreading the
‘ secret I had so foolishly trusted him with, to pre-
‘ vent me from succeeding elsewhere : for such is the
‘ nature of men, that whoever denies himself to do
‘ you a favour, is unwilling that it should be done to
‘ you by any other.

‘ This was the first time I had ever felt that distress
‘ which arises from the want of money ; a distress
‘ very dreadful indeed in a married state ; for what
‘ can be more miserable than to see any thing ne-
‘ cessary to the preservation of a beloved creature,
‘ and not be able to supply it ?

‘ Perhaps you may wonder, madam, that I have
‘ not mentioned Captain James on this occasion ;
‘ but he was at that time laid up at Algiers, (whi-
‘ ther he had been sent by the governor) in a fever.
‘ However, he returned time enough to supply me,
‘ which he did with the utmost readiness, on the
‘ very first mention of my distress ; and the good
‘ colonel, notwithstanding his having disposed of
‘ his money, discounted the captain’s draught. You
‘ see, madam, an instance in the generous behaviour
‘ of my friend James, how false are all universal satires
‘ against human kind. He is indeed one of the wor-
‘ thiest men the world ever produced.

‘ But, perhaps, you will be more pleased still with
‘ the extravagant generosity of my serjeant. The day
‘ before the return of Mr. James, the poor fellow
‘ came to me, with tears in his eyes, and begged I
‘ would

‘ would not be offended at what he was going to mention. He then pulled a purse from his pocket, which contained, he said, the sum of twelve pounds, and which he begged me to accept, crying he was sorry it was not in his power to lend me whatever I wanted. I was so struck with this instance of generosity and friendship in such a person, that I gave him an opportunity of pressing me a second time, before I made him an answer. Indeed I was greatly surprised how he came to be worth that little sum, and no less at his being acquainted with my own wants. In both which points he presently satisfied me. As to the first, it seems he had plundered a Spanish officer of fifteen pistoles; and as to the second, he confessed he had it from my wife’s maid, who had overheard some discourse between her mistress and me. Indeed people, I believe, always deceive themselves who imagine they can conceal distress circumstances from their servants: for these are always extremely quick-sighted on such occasions.

‘ Good Heaven!’ cries Miss Matthews, ‘ how astonishing is such behaviour in so low a fellow!’

‘ I thought so myself,’ answered Booth; ‘ and yet I know not, on a more strict examination into the matter, why we should be more surprised to see greatness of mind discover itself in one degree, or rank of life, than in another. Love, benevolence, or what you will please to call it, may be the reigning passion in a beggar as well as in a prince; and wherever it is, its energies will be the same.

‘ To confess the truth, I am afraid we often compliment what we call upper life, with too much injustice, at the expence of the lower. As it is no rare thing to see instances which degrade human nature, in persons of the highest birth and education; so I apprehend, that examples of whatever is really great and good, have been sometimes found amongst those who have wanted all such advantages. In reality, palaces, I make no doubt, do sometimes contain nothing but dreariness and darkness, and

‘ the sun of righteousness hath shone forth with all
‘ its glory in a cottage.’

C H A P. VIII.

The story of Booth continued.

MR. Booth thus went on :

‘ We now took leave of the garrison, and
‘ having landed at Marseilles, arrived at Montpelier,
‘ without any thing happening to us worth remem-
‘ brance, except the extreme sea-sickness of poor
‘ Amelia; but I was afterwards well repaid for the
‘ terrors which it occasioned me, by the good conse-
‘ quences which attended it: for I believe it contri-
‘ buted even more than the air of Montpelier, to the
‘ perfect re-establishment of her health.’

‘ I ask your pardon for interrupting you,’ cries
Miss Matthews, ‘ but you never satisfied me whe-
‘ ther you took the serjeant’s money.—You have
‘ made me half in love with that charming fel-
‘ low.’

‘ How can you imagine, madam,’ answered Booth,
‘ I should have taken from a poor fellow what was of
‘ so little consequence to me, and at the same time
‘ of so much to him?—Perhaps now you will derive
‘ this from the passion of pride.’

‘ Indeed,’ says she, ‘ I neither derive it from the
‘ passion of pride, nor from the passion of folly; but
‘ methinks you should have accepted the offer, and I
‘ am convinced you hurt him very much when you
‘ refused it. But pray proceed in your story.’ Then
Booth went on as follows :

‘ As Amelia recovered her health and spirits daily,
‘ we began to pass our time very pleasantly at Mont-
‘ pelier: for the greatest enemy to the French will ac-
‘ knowledge, that they are the best people in the
‘ world to live amongst for a little while. In some
‘ countries it is almost as easy to get a good estate
‘ as a good acquaintance. In England, particular-
‘ ly, acquaintance is of almost as slow growth as an
‘ oak; so that the age of man scarce suffices to
‘ bring it to any perfection, and families seldom con-
‘ tract

‘ tract any great intimacy till the third, or at least the second generation. So shy indeed are we English of letting a stranger into our houses, that one would imagine we regarded all such as thieves. Now the French are the very reverse. Being a stranger among them entitles you to the better place, and to the greater degree of civility; and if you wear but the appearance of a gentleman, they never suspect you are not one. Their friendship indeed seldom extends so far as their purse; nor is such friendship usual in other countries. To say the truth, politeness carries friendship far enough in the ordinary occasions of life, and those who want this accomplishment rarely make amends for it by their sincerity: for bluntness, or rather rudeness, as it commonly deserves to be called, is not always so much a mark of honesty as it is taken to be.

‘ The day after our arrival we became acquainted with Mons. Bagillard. He was a Frenchman of great wit and vivacity, with a greater share of learning than gentlemen are usually possessed of. As he lodged in the same house with us, we were immediately acquainted, and I liked his conversation so well, that I never thought I had too much of his company. Indeed I spent so much of my time with him, that Amelia (I know not whether I ought to mention it) grew uneasy at our familiarity, and complained of my being too little with her, from my violent fondness for my new acquaintance; for our conversation turning chiefly upon books, and principally Latin ones (for we read several of the classics together) she could have but little entertainment by being with us. When my wife had once taken it into her head that she was deprived of my company by Mr. Bagillard, it was impossible to change her opinion; and though I now spent more of my time with her than I had ever done before, she still grew more and more dissatisfied, till at last, she very earnestly desired me to quit my lodgings, and insisted upon it with more vehemence than I had ever known her express before. To say the truth, if that excellent woman could ever be thought

‘ unreasonable, I thought she was so on this occasion.

‘ But in what light soever her desires appeared to me, as they manifestly arose from an affection of which I had daily the most endearing proofs, I resolved to comply with her, and accordingly removed to a distant part of the town; for it is my opinion that we can have but little love for the person whom we will never indulge in an unreasonable demand. Indeed, I was under a difficulty with regard to Monsr. Bagillard; for as I could not possibly communicate to him the true reason for quitting my lodgings; so I found it as difficult to deceive him by a counterfeit one; besides, I was apprehensive I should have little less of his company than before. I could, indeed, have avoided this dilemma by leaving Montpelier; for Amelia had perfectly recovered her health; but I had faithfully promised Captain James to wait his return from Italy, whither he was gone some time before from Gibraltar; nor was it proper for Amelia to take any long journey, she being now near six months gone with child.

‘ This difficulty, however, proved to be less than I had imagined it; for my French friend, whether he suspected any thing from my wife’s behaviour, though she never, as I observed, shewed him the least incivility, became suddenly as cold on his side. After our leaving the lodgings, he never made above two or three formal visits; indeed his time was soon after entirely taken up by an intrigue with a certain countess, which blazed all over Montpelier.

‘ We had not been long in our new apartments before an English officer arrived at Montpelier, and came to lodge in the same house with us. This gentleman, whose name was Bath, was of the rank of a major, and had so much singularity in his character, that, perhaps, you never heard of any like him. He was far from having any of those bookish qualifications, which had before caused my Amelia’s disquiet. It is true, his discourse generally turned on matters of no feminine kind; war
‘ and

‘ and martial exploits being the ordinary topics of his
‘ conversation : however, as he had a sister with
‘ whom Amelia was greatly pleased, an intimacy pre-
‘ sently grew between us, and we four lived in one
‘ family.

‘ The major was a great dealer in the marvellous,
‘ and was constantly the little hero of his own tale.
‘ This made him very entertaining to Amelia, who,
‘ of all persons in the world, hath the truest taste and
‘ enjoyment of the ridiculous ; for whilst no one
‘ sooner discovers it in the character of another, no
‘ one so well conceals her knowledge of it from the
‘ ridiculous person. I cannot help mentioning a sen-
‘ timent of hers on this head, as I think it doth her
‘ great honour.’ “ If I had the same neglect,” said
she, “ for ridiculous people with the generality of
“ the world, I should rather think them the objects
“ of tears than laughter ; but, in reality, I have known
“ several who, in some parts of their characters, have
“ been extremely ridiculous, in others have been
“ altogether as amiable. For instance,” said she,
“ here is the major, who tells us of many things
“ which he has never seen, and of others which he
“ hath never done, and both in the most extravagant
“ excess ; and yet how amiable is his behaviour to
“ his poor sister, whom he hath not only brought
“ over hither for her health, at his own expence,
“ but is come to bear her company.” ‘ I believe,
‘ madam, I repeat her very words ; for I am very apt
‘ to remember what she says.

‘ You will easily believe, from a circumstance I
‘ have just mentioned in the major’s favour, especially
‘ when I have told you that his sister was one of the
‘ best of girls, that it was entirely necessary to hide
‘ from her all kind of laughter at any part of her
‘ brother’s behaviour. To say the truth, this was
‘ easy enough to do ; for the poor girl was so blinded
‘ with love and gratitude, and so highly honoured
‘ and revered her brother, that she had not the
‘ least suspicion that there was a person in the world
‘ capable of laughing at him.

‘ Indeed, I am certain she never made the least discovery of our ridicule ; for I am well convinced she would have resented it : for besides the love she bore her brother, she had a little family pride, which would sometimes appear. To say the truth, if she had any fault, it was that of vanity ; but she was a very good girl upon the whole ; and none of us are entirely free from faults.’

‘ You are a good natured fellow, Will,’ answered Miss Matthews, ‘ but vanity is a fault of the first magnitude in a woman, and often the occasion of many others.’

To this Booth made no answer, but continued his story.

‘ In this company we passed two or three months very agreeably till the major and I both betook ourselves to our several nurseries ; my wife being brought to bed of a girl, and Miss Bath confined to her chamber by a surfeit, which had like to have occasioned her death.’

Here Miss Matthews burst into a loud laugh, of which when Booth asked the reason, she said she could not forbear at the thoughts of two such nurses : ‘ And did you really,’ says she, ‘ make your wife’s caudle yourself ?’

‘ Indeed, madam,’ said he, ‘ I did ; and do you think that so extraordinary.’

‘ Indeed I do,’ answered she, ‘ I thought the best husbands had looked on their wives lying-in as a time of festival and jolity. What did you not even get drunk in the time of your wife’s delivery ? tell me honestly how you employed yourself at this time.’

‘ Why then honestly,’ replied he, ‘ and in defiance of your laughter, I lay behind her bolster, and supported her in my arms ; and upon my soul, I believe I felt more pain in my mind than she underwent in her body. And now answer me as honestly : do you really think it a proper time of mirth, when the creature one loves to distraction is undergoing the most racking torments, as well as in the most imminent danger ? and—but I need not express any more tender circumstances.

‘ I am

‘ I am to answer honestly,’ cried she.—‘ Yes. ‘ And
‘ sincerely,’ cries Booth.—‘ Why then honestly and
‘ sincerely,’ says she, ‘ may I never see Heaven, if
‘ I don’t think you an angel of a man.’

‘ Nay, madam,’ answered Booth—‘ but, indeed,
‘ you do me too much honour, there are many such
‘ husbands—Nay, have we not an example of the
‘ like tenderness in the major? though as to him, I
‘ believe, I shall make you laugh. While my wife
‘ lay in, Miss Bath being extremely ill, I went one
‘ day to the door of her apartment, to enquire after
‘ her health, as well as for the major, whom I had not
‘ seen during a whole week. I knocked softly at the
‘ door, and being bid to open it, I found the major
‘ in his sister’s antichamber warming her posset. His
‘ dress was certainly whimsical enough, having on a
‘ woman’s bed-gown, and a very dirty flannel night-
‘ cap, which being added to a very odd person (for
‘ he is a very awkward thin man near seven feet high)
‘ might have formed, in the opinion of most men, a
‘ very proper object of laughter. The major started
‘ from his seat at my entering into the room, and with
‘ much emotion, and a great oath, cried out, “ is it
“ you, sir?” I then enquired after his and his sister’s
‘ health. He answered, that his sister was better,
‘ and he was very well,’ “ though I did not expect,
“ sir,” ‘ cried he, with not a little confusion, “ to
“ be seen by you in this situation.” ‘ I told him,
‘ I thought it impossible he could appear in a si-
‘ tuation more becoming his character.’ “ You do
“ not?” ‘ answered he.’ “ By G—— I am very
“ much obliged to you for that opinion; but I be-
“ lieve, sir, however my weakness may prevail on me
“ to descend from it, no man can be more conscious
“ of his own dignity than myself.” ‘ His sister then
‘ called to him from the inner room; upon which he
‘ rang the bell for her servant, and then after a stride or
‘ two across the room, he said, with an elated aspect,
“ I would not have you think, Mr. Booth, because
“ you have caught me in this dishabille, by coming
“ upon me a little too abruptly, I cannot help saying
“ a little too abruptly, that I am my sister’s nurse.

“ I know better what is due to the dignity of a man,
“ and I have shewn it in a line of battle.—I think
“ I have made a figure there, Mr. Booth, and be-
“ coming my character; by G——I ought not to be
“ despised too much, if my nature is not totally with-
“ out its weaknesses.” ‘ He uttered this, and some
‘ more of the same kind, with great majesty, or, as
‘ he called it, dignity. Indeed, he used some hard
‘ words that I did not understand; for all his words
‘ are not to be found in a dictionary. Upon the
‘ whole, I could not easily refrain from laughter;
‘ however, I conquered myself, and soon after retired
‘ from him, astonished that it was possible for a man
‘ to possess true goodness, and be, at the same time,
‘ ashamed of it.

‘ But if I was surprised at what had past at this
‘ visit, how much more was I surprised the next
‘ morning, when he came very early to my chamber,
‘ and told me he had not been able to sleep one wink
‘ at what had past between us! “ there were some
“ words of yours,” ‘ says he, “ which must be fur-
“ ther explained before we part. You told me, sir,
“ when you found me in that situation, which I can-
“ not bear to recollect, that you thought I could not
“ appear in one more becoming my character; these
“ were the words, I shall never forget them. Do
“ you imagine that there is any of the dignity of a
“ man wanting in my character? do you think that
“ I have, during my sister’s illness, behaved with a
“ weakness that favours too much of effeminacy? I
“ know how much it is beneath a man to whine and
“ whimper about a trifling girl as well as you, or
“ any man; and if my sister had died, I should have
“ behaved like a man on the occasion. I would not
“ have you think I confined myself from company
“ merely upon her account. I was very much dis-
“ ordered myself. And when you surprised me in
“ that situation, I repeat again in that situation, her
“ nurse had not left the room three minutes, and I
“ was blowing the fire for fear it should have gone
“ out.”—‘ In this manner he ran on almost a quar-
‘ ter of an hour, before he would suffer me to speak.
‘ At

At last, looking stedfastly in his face, I asked him if I must conclude that he was in earnest.—“I earnest,” says he, repeating my words, “do you then take my character for a jest!” “looker, fir,” said I, very gravely, I think we know one another very well; and I have no reason to suspect you should impute it to fear, when I tell you, I was so far from intending to affront you, that I meant you one of the highest compliments. Tendernefs for women is so far from lessening, that it proves a true manly character. The manly Brutus shewed the utmost tendernefs to his Porcia; and the great king of Sweden, the bravest, and even fiercest of men, shut himself up three whole days in the midst of a campaign, and would see no company on the death of a favourite sister. At these words, I saw his features soften; and he cried out, “d—n me, I admire the king of Sweden of all the men in the world; and he is a rascal that is ashamed of doing any thing which the king of Sweden did.—And yet if any king of Sweden in France was to tell me that his sister had more merit than mine; by G---- I’d knock his brains about his ears. Poor little Betsy! she is the honestest, worthiest girl that ever was born. Heaven be praised, she is recovered; for, if I had lost her, I never should have enjoyed another happy moment.”—“In this manner,” he ran on some time, till the tears began to overflow—which, when he perceived, he stopt; perhaps he was unable to go on; for he seemed almost choaked;—after a short silence, however, having wiped his eyes with his handkerchief, he fetched a deep sigh, and cried, “I am ashamed you should see this, Mr. Booth; but d—n me, nature will get the better of dignity.” “I now comforted him with the example of Xerxes, as I had before done with that of the king of Sweden; and soon after we sat down to breakfast together with much cordial friendship: for I assure you, with all his oddity, there is not a better-natured man in the world than the major.

‘ Good-natured, indeed !’ cries Miss Matthews, with great scorn.—‘ A fool ! how can you mention such a fellow with commendation ?’

Booth spoke as much as he could in defence of his friend ; indeed he had represented him in as favourable a light as possible, and had particularly left out those hard words, with which, as he hath observed a little before, the major interlarded his discourse. Booth then proceeded as in the next chapter.

C H A P. IX.

Containing very extraordinary matters.

‘ **M**ISS Bath,’ continued Booth, ‘ now recovered so fast, that she was abroad as soon as my wife. Our little party quarrée began to grow agreeable again ; and we mixed with the company of the place more than we had done before. Monf. Bagillard now again renewed his intimacy ; for the countess his mistress was gone to Paris. At which my wife at first shewed no dissatisfaction ; and I imagined that as she had a friend and companion of her own sex (for Miss Bath and she had contracted the highest fondness for each other) that she would the less miss my company. However, I was disappointed in this expectation ; for she soon began to express her former uneasiness, and her impatience for the arrival of Captain James, that we might entirely quit Montpelier.

‘ I could not avoid conceiving some little displeasure at this humour of my wife, which I was forced to think a little unreasonable.’—‘ A little, do you call it,’ says Miss Matthews, ‘ Good Heavens ! what a husband are you !’—‘ How little worthy,’ answered he, ‘ as you will say hereafter, of such a wife as my Amelia. One day as we were sitting together, I heard a violent scream, upon which my wife starting up, cried out, “ Sure that’s Miss Bath’s voice,” and immediately ran towards the chamber whence it proceeded. I followed her ; and when we arrived, we there beheld the most
‘ shock-

‘ shocking sight imaginable ; Miss Bath lying dead
‘ on the floor, and the major all bloody kneeling by
‘ her, and roaring out for assistance. Amelia, though
‘ she was herself in little better condition than her
‘ friend, ran hastily to her, bared her neck, and at-
‘ tempted to loosen her stays, while I ran up and
‘ down, scarce knowing what I did, calling for wa-
‘ ter and cordials, and dispatching several servants
‘ one after another for doctors and surgeons.

‘ Water, cordials, and all necessary implements
‘ being brought, Miss Bath was, at length, recover-
‘ ed, and placed in her chair, when the major seated
‘ himself by her. And now the young lady being
‘ restored to life, the major, who, till then, had en-
‘ gaged as little of his own, as of any other person’s
‘ attention, became the object of all our considera-
‘ tions, especially his poor sister’s, who had no sooner
‘ recovered sufficient strength, than she began to la-
‘ ment her brother, crying out, that he was killed ;
‘ and bitterly bewailing her fate, in having revived
‘ from her swoon to behold so dreadful a spectacle.
‘ While Amelia applied herself to sooth the agonies
‘ of her friend, I began to enquire into the condition
‘ of the major. In which I was assisted by a surgeon,
‘ who now arrived. The major declared with great
‘ cheerfulness, that he did not apprehend his wound
‘ to be in the least dangerous, and therefore begged
‘ his sister to be comforted, saying, he was convinced
‘ the surgeon would soon give her the same assurance ;
‘ but that good man was not so liberal of assurances
‘ as the major had expected ; for as soon as he had
‘ probed the wound, he afforded no more than hopes,
‘ declaring that it was a very ugly wound ; but ad-
‘ ed, by way of consolation, that he had cured many
‘ much worse.

‘ When the major was dressed, his sister seemed to
‘ possess his whole thoughts, and all his care was to
‘ relieve her grief. He solemnly protested, that it
‘ was no more than a flesh wound, and not very deep,
‘ nor could, as he apprehended, be in the least dan-
‘ gerous ; and as for the cold expressions of the sur-
‘ geon, he very well accounted for them from a mo-
‘ tive

‘tive too obvious to be mentioned. From these declarations of her brother, and the interposition of her friends; and above all, I believe, from that vast vent which she had given to her fright, Miss Bath seemed a little pacified; Amelia therefore at last prevailed; and as terror abated, curiosity became the superior passion. I therefore now began to enquire what had occasioned that accident, whence all the uproar arose.

‘The major took me by the hand, and looking very kindly at me,’ said, “My dear Mr. Booth, I must begin by asking your pardon; for I have done you an injury, for which nothing but the height of friendship in me can be an excuse; and therefore nothing but the height of friendship in you can forgive.” ‘This preamble, madam, you will easily believe, greatly alarmed all the company, but especially me.—I answered, dear major, I forgive you, let it be what it will; but what is it possible you can have done to injure me?’ “That,” replied he, “which I am convinced a man of your honour and dignity of nature, by G—— must conclude to be one of the highest injuries. I have taken out of your own hands the doing yourself justice. I am afraid I have killed the man who hath injured your honour. I mean that villain, Bagillard—but I cannot proceed; for you, madam,” said he to my wife, “are concerned; and I know what is due to the dignity of your sex.”—“Amelia, I observed, turned pale at these words, but eagerly begged him to proceed.”—“Nay madam,” answered he, “if I am commanded by a lady, it is a part of my dignity to obey.” ‘He then proceeded to tell us, that Bagillard had rallied him upon a supposition that he was pursuing my wife, with a view of gallantry; telling him that he could never succeed; giving hints that if it had been possible, he should have succeeded himself; and ending with calling my poor Amelia an accomplished prude; upon which the major gave Bagillard a box in the ear, and both immediately drew their swords.

‘ The major had scarce ended his speech, when a
‘ servant came into the room, and told me there was
‘ a friar below who desired to speak with me in great
‘ haste. I shook the major by the hand, and told
‘ him I not only forgave him, but was extremely
‘ obliged to his friendship; and then going to the
‘ friar, I found that he was Bagillard’s confessor,
‘ from whom he came to me, with an earnest desire
‘ of seeing me, that he might ask my pardon, and re-
‘ ceive my forgiveness before he died, for the injury
‘ he had intended me. My wife at first opposed my
‘ going, from some sudden fears on my account; but
‘ when she was convinced they were groundless, she
‘ consented.

‘ I found Bagillard in his bed; for the major’s
‘ sword had passed up to the very hilt through his
‘ body. After having very earnestly asked my par-
‘ don, he made me many compliments on the pos-
‘ session of a woman, who, joined to the most exqui-
‘ site beauty, was mistress of the most impregnable
‘ virtue; as a proof of which, he acknowledged the
‘ vehemence as well as ill success of his attempts;
‘ and to make Amelia’s virtue appear the brighter,
‘ his vanity was so predominant, he could not for-
‘ bear running over the names of several women of
‘ fashion who had yielded to his passion, which, he
‘ said, had never raged so violently for any other as for
‘ my poor Amelia; and that this violence, which he
‘ had found wholly unconquerable, he hoped would
‘ procure his pardon at my hands. It is unnecessary
‘ to mention what I said on the occasion. I assured
‘ him of my entire forgiveness; and so we parted.
‘ To say the truth, I afterwards thought myself almost
‘ obliged to him for a meeting with Amelia, the most
‘ luxuriously delicate that can be imagined.

‘ I now ran to my wife, whom I embraced with
‘ raptures of love and tenderness. When the first
‘ torrent of these was a little abated, “ Confess to
“ me, my dear,” “ said she,” “ could your goodness
“ prevent you from thinking me a little unreason-
“ able in expressing so much uneasiness at the loss of
“ your company, while I ought to have rejoiced in
“ the

“ the thoughts of your being so well entertained ?
 “ I know you must ; and then consider what I must
 “ have felt, while I knew I was daily lessening my-
 “ self in your esteem, and forced into a conduct,
 “ which I was sensible must appear to you, who was
 “ ignorant of my motive, to be mean, vulgar, and
 “ selfish. And yet what other course had I to take,
 “ with a man whom no denial, no scorn could abash ?
 “ — But if this was a cruel task, how much more
 “ wretched still was the constraint I was obliged to
 “ wear in his presence before you, to shew outward
 “ civility to the man whom my soul detested, for
 “ fear of any fatal consequence from your suspicion ;
 “ and this too, while I was afraid he would construe
 “ it to be an encouragement.—Do you not pity your
 “ poor Amelia when you reflect on her situation ?”—
 ‘ Pity ! cried I, my love, is pity an adequate expres-
 ‘ sion for esteem, for adoration ?—But how, my love,
 ‘ could he carry this on so secretly—by letters ?’ “ O
 “ no, he offered me many ; but I never would receive
 “ but one, and that I returned him. Good G——
 “ I would not have such a letter in my possession for
 “ the universe ; I thought my eyes contaminated with
 “ reading it.”—‘ O brave,’ cried Miss Matthews :
 ‘ Heroic, I protest.

‘ Had I a wish that did not bear
 ‘ The stamp and image of my dear,
 ‘ I’d pierce my heart through every vein,
 ‘ And die to let it out again.’
 ‘ And can you really,’ cried he, ‘ laugh at so much
 ‘ tenderness ?’ ‘ I laugh at tenderness ! O Mr. Booth,’
 answered she, ‘ Thou knowest but little of Calista.’ ‘ I
 ‘ thought formerly,’ cried he, ‘ I knew a great deal,
 ‘ and thought you, of all women in the world, to have
 ‘ the greatest’———Of all women !—Take care, Mr.
 ‘ Booth,’ said she.—‘ By Heaven, if you thought so,
 ‘ you thought truly—But what is the object of my
 ‘ tenderness, such an object as’———‘ Well, madam,’
 says he, ‘ I hope you will find one.’——‘ I thank you
 ‘ for that hope, however,’ says she, ‘ cold as it is ;
 ‘ but pray go on with your story ;’ which command
 he immediately obeyed.

CHAP. X.

Containing a letter of a very curious kind.

‘THE major’s wound,’ continued Booth, was
‘really as slight as he believed it ; so that in a
‘very few days he was perfectly well ; nor was Bagil-
‘lard, though run through the body, long apprehend-
‘ed to be in any danger of his life. The major then
‘took me aside, and wishing me heartily joy of Bagil-
‘lard’s recovery, told me I should now, by the gift
‘(as it were) of Heaven, have an opportunity of doing
‘myself justice. I answered, I could not think of any
‘such thing : for that when I imagined he was on his
‘death-bed, I had heartily and sincerely forgiven
‘him.’ “Very right,” replied the major, “and
“consistent with your honour, when he was on his
“death-bed ; but that forgiveness was only conditio-
“nal, and is revoked by his recovery.” “I told him
‘I could not possibly revoke it ; for that my anger
‘was really gone.’—“What hath anger,” cried he,
“to do with the matter ? the dignity of my nature
“hath been always my reason for drawing my sword ;
“and when that is concerned, I can as readily fight
“with the man I love, as with the man I hate.”—“I
‘will not tire you with the repetition of the whole ar-
‘gument, in which the major did not prevail ; and I
‘really believe, I sunk a little in his esteem upon that
‘account, till Captain James, who arrived soon after,
‘again perfectly re-instated me in his favour.

‘When the captain was come, there remained no
‘cause of our longer stay at Montpelier ; for as to my
‘wife, she was in a better state of health than I had
‘ever known her, and Miss Bath had not only reco-
‘vered her health, but her bloom ; and from a pale
‘skeleton, was become a plump, handsome, young
‘woman. James was again my cashier ; for far from
‘receiving any remittance, it was now a long time
‘since I had received any letter from England, though
‘both myself and my dear Amelia had written several,
‘both to my mother and sister ; and now at our de-
‘parture from Montpelier, I bethought myself of
‘writing

‘ writing to my good friend the doctor, acquainting
‘ him with our journey to Paris, whither I desired he
‘ would direct his answer.

‘ At Paris we all arrived, without encountering any
‘ adventure on the road worth relating ; nor did any
‘ thing of consequence happen here during the first
‘ fortnight : for as you know neither Captain James
‘ nor Miss Bath, it is scarce worth telling you, that
‘ an affection, which afterwards ended in a marriage,
‘ began now to appear between them, in which it may
‘ appear odd to you that I made the first discovery
‘ of the lady’s flame, and my wife of the captain’s.

‘ The seventeenth day after our arrival at Paris, I
‘ received a letter from the doctor, which I have in
‘ my pocket-book ; and, if you please, I will read it
‘ you : for I would not willingly do any injury to his
‘ words.’

The lady, you may easily believe, desired to hear
the letter, and Booth read it as follows :

“ My dear children,

“ **F**OR I will now call you so, as you have nei-
“ ther of you now any other parent in this
“ world. Of this melancholy news I should have
“ sent you earlier notice, if I had thought you ig-
“ norant of it, or indeed if I had known whither to
“ have written. If your sister hath received any let-
“ ters from you, she hath kept them a secret, and
“ perhaps out of affection to you hath repositied them
“ in the same place where she keeps her goodness,
“ and, what I am afraid is much dearer to her, her
“ money. The reports concerning you have been
“ various ; so is always the case in matters where men
“ are ignorant : for when no man knows what the
“ truth is, every man thinks himself at liberty to re-
“ port what he pleases. Those who wish you well,
“ son Booth, say simply that you are dead ; others,
“ that you ran away from the siege, and was cashier-
“ ed. As for my daughter, all agree that she is a
“ saint above ; and there are not wanting those who
“ hint that her husband sent her thither. From this
“ beginning you will expect, I suppose, better news
“ than

“ than I am going to tell you ; but pray, my dear
 “ children, why may not I, who have always laughed
 “ at my own afflictions, laugh at yours, without the
 “ censure of much malevolence ? I wish you could
 “ learn this temper from me ; for, take my word for
 “ it, nothing truer ever came from the mouth of a
 “ heathen than that sentence,

“ —*Leve fit quod bene fertur onus* *.

“ And though I must confess, I never thought Ari-
 “ stotle (whom I do not take for so great a blockhead
 “ as some who have never read him) doth not very
 “ well resolve the doubt which he hath raised in his
 “ Ethics, viz. How a man, in the midst of King
 “ Priam’s misfortunes, can be called happy ? Yet I
 “ have long thought that there is no calamity so great
 “ that a christian philosopher may not reasonably
 “ laugh at it. If the heathen Cicero, doubting of
 “ immortality (for so wise a man must have doubted
 “ of that which had such slender arguments to sup-
 “ port it) could assert it as the office of wisdom, *Hu-*
 “ *manas res despiciere atque infra se positas arbitrari* †.

“ Which passage, with much more to the same pur-
 “ pose, you will find in the third book of his Tuscu-
 “ lan Questions.

“ With how much greater confidence may a good
 “ christian despise, and even deride all temporary
 “ and short transitory evils ! If the poor wretch, who
 “ is trudging on to his miserable cottage, can laugh
 “ at the storms, and tempests, the rain and whirlwinds
 “ which surround him, while his richest hope is only
 “ that of rest, how much more chearfully must a man
 “ pass through such transient evils whose spirits are
 “ buoyed up with the certain expectation of finding a
 “ noble palace, and the most sumptuous entertain-
 “ ment ready to receive him ? I do not much like
 “ the simile ; but I cannot think of a better. And
 “ yet, inadequate as the simile is, we may, I think,
 “ from the actions of mankind, conclude that they
 “ will

* The burden becomes light by being well borne.

† To look down on all human affairs as matters below his con-
 sideration.

“ will consider it as much too strong ; for in the case
“ I have put of the entertainment, is there any man
“ so tender or poor-spirited as not to despise and often
“ to deride the fiercest of those inclemencies which I
“ have mentioned ; but in our journey to the glorious
“ mansions of everlasting bliss, how severely is every
“ little rub, every trifling accident lamented ; and if
“ fortune showers down any of her heavier storms
“ upon us, how wretched do we presently appear to
“ ourselves and to others ! The reason of this can be
“ no other than that we are not in earnest in our faith ;
“ at the best we think, with too little attention, on
“ this our great concern. While the most paultry
“ matters of this world, even those pitiful trifles,
“ those childish gewgaws, riches and honours, are
“ transacted with the utmost earnestness, and most se-
“ rious application, the grand and weighty affair of
“ immortality is postponed and disregarded, nor ever
“ brought into the least competition with our affairs
“ here. If one of my cloth should begin a discourse
“ of Heaven in the scenes of business or pleasure ; in
“ the Court of Requests, at Garaway’s or at White’s,
“ would he gain a hearing, unless, perhaps, of some
“ sorry jester who would desire to ridicule him ? would
“ he not presently acquire the name of the mad par-
“ son, and be thought by all men worthy of Bedlam ?
“ or would he not be treated as the Romans treated
“ their Aretalogi *, and considered in the light of a
“ buffoon. But why should I mention those places
“ of hurry and worldly pursuit ?—What attention do
“ we engage even in the pulpit ? here, if a sermon
“ be prolonged a little beyond the usual hour, doth it
“ not set half the audience asleep ? as I question not
“ I have by this time both my children.—Well then,
“ like a good-natured surgeon, who prepares his pa-
“ tient for a painful operation, by endeavouring as
“ much as he can to deaden his sensation, I will now
“ communicate to you, in your slumbering condition,
“ the news with which I threatened you. Your good
“ mother, you are to know, is dead at last, and hath
“ left

* A set of beggarly philosophers, who diverted great men at their table with burlesque discourses on virtue.

“ left her whole fortune to her elder daughter.—This
“ is all the ill news I have to tell you. Confess now, if
“ you are awake, did you not expect it was much
“ worse? did not you apprehend that your charming
“ child was dead? far from it, he is in perfect health,
“ and the admiration of every body; what is more,
“ he will be taken care of, with the tendernefs of a
“ parent, till your return. What pleasure must this
“ give you! if indeed any thing can add to the hap-
“ piness of a married couple, who are extremely and
“ deservedly fond of each other, and, as you write
“ me, in perfect health. A superstitious heathen
“ would have dreaded the malice of Nemesis in your
“ situation; but as I am a christian, I shall venture to
“ add another circumstance to your felicity, by assur-
“ ing you that you have, besides your wife, a faithful
“ and zealous friend.—Do not therefore, my dear
“ children, fall into that fault which the excellent
“ Thucydides observes, is too common in human na-
“ ture, to bear heavily the being deprived of the
“ smaller good, without conceiving, at the same
“ time, any gratitude for the much greater blessings
“ which we are suffered to enjoy. I have only far-
“ ther to tell you, my son, that when you call at Mr.
“ Morand’s, Rue Dauphine, you will find yourself
“ worth a hundred pounds. Good Heaven! how
“ much richer are you than millions of people who
“ are in want of nothing! Farewel, and know me
“ for

“ Your sincere and affectionate friend.”

‘ There, madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ how do you like
‘ the letter?’

‘ Oh! extremely,’ answered she, ‘ the doctor is a
‘ charming man; I always loved dearly to hear him
‘ preach. I remember to have heard of Mrs. Harris’s
‘ death above a year before I left the country; but
‘ never knew the particulars of her will before. I am
‘ extremely sorry for it, upon my honour.’

‘ Oh fy! madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ have you so soon
‘ forgot the chief purport of the doctor’s letter?’

‘ Ay, ay,’ cried she, ‘ these are very pretty things
‘ to

‘ to read, I acknowledge ; but the loss of fortune is
 ‘ a serious matter ; and I am sure a man of Mr.
 ‘ Booth’s understanding must think so.’ ‘ One conside-
 ‘ ration, I must own, madam,’ answered he, ‘ a good
 ‘ deal baffled all the doctor’s arguments. This was
 ‘ the concern for my little growing family, who must
 ‘ one day feel the loss ; nor was I so easy upon Ame-
 ‘ lia’s account as upon my own, though she herself put
 ‘ on the utmost chearfulness, and stretched her inven-
 ‘ tion to the utmost to comfort me.—But sure, madam,
 ‘ there is something in the doctor’s letter to admire
 ‘ beyond the philosophy of it ; what think you of
 ‘ that easy, generous, friendly manner, in which he
 ‘ sent me the hundred pounds ?’

‘ Very noble and great indeed,’ replied she ; ‘ but
 ‘ pray go on with your story ; for I long to hear the
 ‘ whole.’

C H A P. XI.

In which Mr. Booth relates his return to England.

‘ **N**OTHING remarkable, as I remember, hap-
 ‘ pened during our stay at Paris, which we left
 ‘ soon after, and came to London. Here we rested
 ‘ only two days, and then, taking leave of our fel-
 ‘ low-travellers, we set out for Wiltshire, my wife be-
 ‘ ing so impatient to see the child, which she had left
 ‘ behind her, that the child she carried with her was
 ‘ almost killed with the fatigue of the journey.

‘ We arrived at our inn late in the evening. Amelia,
 ‘ though she had no great reason to be pleased with
 ‘ any part of her sister’s behaviour, resolved to behave
 ‘ to her, as if nothing wrong had ever happened.
 ‘ She therefore sent a kind note to her the moment of
 ‘ our arrival, giving her her option whether she would
 ‘ come to us at the inn, or whether we should that
 ‘ evening wait on her. The servant, after waiting an
 ‘ hour, brought us an answer, excusing her from
 ‘ coming to us so late, as she was disordered with a
 ‘ cold, and desiring my wife by no means to think of
 ‘ venturing out after the fatigue of her journey, say-
 ‘ ing, she would, on that account, defer the great
 ‘ plea-

‘ pleasure of seeing her till the morning, without taking any more notice of your humble servant, than if no such person had been in the world, though I had very civilly sent my compliments to her. I should not mention this trifle, if it was not to shew you the nature of the woman, and that it will be a kind of key to her future conduct.

‘ When the servant returned, the good doctor, who had been with us almost all the time of his absence, hurried us away to his house, where we presently found a supper and a bed prepared for us. My wife was eagerly desirous to see her child that night; but the doctor would not suffer it; and as he was at nurse at a distant part of the town, and the doctor assured her he had seen him in perfect health that evening, she suffered herself at last to be dissuaded.

‘ We spent that evening in the most agreeable manner: for the doctor’s wit and humour, joined to the highest chearfulness and good-nature, made him the most agreeable companion in the world; and he was now in the highest spirits, which he was pleased to place to our account. We sat together to a very late hour: for so excellent is my wife’s constitution, that she declared she was scarce sensible of any fatigue from her late journies.

‘ Amelia slept not a wink all night, and in the morning early the doctor accompanied us to the little infant. The transports we felt on this occasion were really enchanting, nor can any but a fond parent conceive, I am certain, the least idea of them. Our imaginations suggested a hundred agreeable circumstances, none of which had, perhaps, any foundation. We made words and meaning out of every sound, and in every feature I found out some resemblance to my Amelia, as she did to me.

‘ But I ask your pardon for dwelling on such incidents; and will proceed to scenes which, to most persons, will be more entertaining.

‘ We went hence to pay a visit to Miss Harris, whose reception of us was, I think, truly ridiculous; and as you know the lady, I will endeavour to describe it particularly. At our first arrival we were ushered

ushered into a parlour, where we were suffered to wait almost an hour. At length the lady of the house appeared in deep mourning, with a face, if possible, more dismal than her dress, in which, however, there was every appearance of art. Her features were indeed skrewed up to the very height of grief. With this face, and in the most solemn gait, she approached Amelia, and coldly saluted her. After which, she made me a very distant formal courtesy, and we all sat down. A short silence now ensued, which Miss Harris at length broke, with a deep sigh, and said, "Sister, here is a great alteration in this place since you saw it last; Heaven hath been pleased to take my poor mother to itself."—(Here she wiped her eyes, and then continued) "I hope I know my duty, and have learned a proper resignation to the divine will; but something is to be allowed to grief for the best of mothers; for so she was to us both: and if at last she made any distinction, she must have had her reasons for so doing. I am sure I can truly say I never wished, much less desired it." The tears now stood in poor Amelia's eyes; indeed she had paid too many already for the memory of so unnatural a parent. She answered with the sweetness of an angel, that she was far from blaming her sister's emotions on so tender an occasion; that she heartily joined with her in her grief: for that nothing which her mother had done in the latter part of her life, could efface the remembrance of that tenderness which she had formerly shewn her. Her sister caught hold of the word efface, and rung the changes upon it.—"Efface!" cried she, "O Miss Emily (for you must not expect me to repeat names that will be for ever odious) I wish indeed every thing could be effaced.—Effaced! O that that was possible; we might then have still enjoyed my poor mother: for I am convinced she never recovered her grief on a certain occasion."—Thus she ran on, and after many bitter strokes upon her sister, at last directly charged her mother's death on my marriage with Amelia. I could be silent then no longer. I reminded her of the perfect re-

con-

‘ conciliation between us before my departure, and
‘ the great fondness which she expressed for me ; nor
‘ could I help saying in very plain terms, that if she
‘ had ever changed her opinion of me, as I was not
‘ conscious of having deserved such a change by my
‘ own behaviour, I was well convinced to whose good
‘ offices I owed it. Guilt hath very quick ears to an
‘ accusation. Miss Harris immediately answered to
‘ the charge. She said such suspicions were no more
‘ than she expected ; that they were of a piece with
‘ every other part of my conduct, and gave her one
‘ consolation, that they served to account for her
‘ sister Emily’s unkindness, as well to herself as to her
‘ poor deceased mother, and in some measure lessened
‘ the guilt of it with regard to her, since it was not
‘ easy to know how far a woman is in the power of
‘ her husband. My dear Amelia reddened at this re-
‘ flexion on me ; and begged her sister to name any
‘ single instance of unkindness or disrespect, in which
‘ she had ever offended. To this the other answered,
‘ (I am sure I repeat her words, though I cannot
‘ mimic either the voice or air with which they were
‘ spoken)—“ Pray, Miss Emily, which is to be the
“ judge ? yourself or that gentleman ? I remember the
“ time when I could have trusted to your judgment in
“ any affair ; but you are now no longer mistress of
“ yourself, and are not answerable for your actions.
“ Indeed it is my constant prayer that your actions may
“ not be imputed to you.—It was the constant prayer
“ of that blessed woman, my dear mother, who is now
“ a saint above ; a saint whose name I can never men-
“ tion without a tear, though I find you can hear it
“ without one.—I cannot help observing some concern
“ on so melancholy an occasion ; it seems due to de-
“ cency ; but perhaps (for I always wish to excuse
“ you) you are forbid to cry.” The idea of being
‘ bid or forbid to cry, struck so strongly on my fancy,
‘ that indignation only could have prevented me from
‘ laughing. But my narrative, I am afraid, begins
‘ to grow tedious.—In short, after hearing, for near
‘ an hour, every malicious insinuation which a fertile
‘ genius could invent, we took our leave, and sepa-

‘ rated as persons who would never willingly meet
‘ again.

‘ The next morning after this interview, Amelia
‘ received a long letter from Miss Harris ; in which,
‘ after many bitter invectives against me, she excused
‘ her mother, alledging that she had been driven to do
‘ as she did, in order to prevent Amelia’s ruin, if
‘ her fortune had fallen into my hands. She likewise
‘ very remotely hinted that she would be only a trustee
‘ for her sister’s children, and told her, that on one
‘ condition only, she would consent to live with her
‘ as a sister. This was, if she could by any means
‘ be separated from that man, as she was pleased to
‘ call me, who had caused so much mischief in the
‘ family.

‘ I was so enraged at this usage, that, had not
‘ Amelia intervened, I believe I should have applied
‘ to a magistrate for a search-warrant for that picture,
‘ which there was so much reason to suspect she had
‘ stolen ; and which, I am convinced, upon a search,
‘ we should have found in her possession.’

‘ Nay, it is possible enough,’ cries Miss Matthews ;
‘ for I believe there is no wickedness of which the
‘ lady is not capable.’

‘ This agreeable letter was succeeded by another
‘ of the like comfortable kind, which informed me
‘ that the company in which I was, being an addi-
‘ tional one raised in the beginning of the war, was
‘ reduced ; so that I was now a lieutenant on half-
‘ pay.

‘ Whilst we were meditating on our present situa-
‘ tion, the good doctor came to us. When we relat-
‘ ed to him the manner in which my sister had treated
‘ us, he cried out, “ Poor soul ! I pity her heartily ; ”
‘ for this is the severest resentment he ever expresses ;
‘ indeed I have often heard him say, that a wicked
‘ soul is the greatest object of compassion in the world.’
—A sentiment which we shall leave the reader a little
time to digest.

C H A P. XII.

In which Mr. Booth concludes his story.

‘ **T**HE next day the doctor set out for his par-
‘ sonage, which was about thirty miles distant,
‘ whither Amelia and myself accompanied him, and
‘ where we stayed with him all the time of his residence
‘ there, being almost three months.

‘ The situation of the parish under my good friend’s
‘ care is very pleasant. It is placed among meadows,
‘ washed by a clear trout stream, and flanked on both
‘ sides with downs. His house indeed would not
‘ much attract the admiration of the virtuoso. He
‘ built it himself, and it is remarkable only for its
‘ plainness; with which the furniture so well agrees,
‘ that there is no one thing in it that may not be
‘ absolutely necessary, except books, and the prints of
‘ Mr. Hogarth, whom he calls a moral satirist.

‘ Nothing, however, can be imagined more agree-
‘ able than the life that the doctor leads in this
‘ homely house, which he calls his earthly paradise.
‘ All his parishioners, whom he treats as his children,
‘ regard him as their common father. Once in
‘ a week he constantly visits every house in the parish,
‘ examines, commends, and rebukes as he finds oc-
‘ casion. This is practised likewise by his curate in
‘ his absence; and so good an effect is produced by
‘ this their care, that no quarrels ever proceed either
‘ to blows or law suits; no beggar is to be found in
‘ the whole parish; nor did I ever hear a very profane
‘ oath all the time I lived in it.

‘ But to return, from so agreeable a digression, to
‘ my own affairs, that are much less worth your atten-
‘ tion. In the midst of all the pleasures I tasted in
‘ this sweet place, and in the most delightful com-
‘ pany, the woman and man whom I loved above all
‘ things, melancholy reflexions concerning my un-
‘ happy circumstances would often steal into my
‘ thoughts. My fortune was now reduced to less
‘ than forty pounds a year; I had already two chil-
‘ dren, and my dear Amelia was again with child.

‘ One day the doctor found me sitting by myself,
‘ and employed in melancholy contemplations on this
‘ subject. He told me he had observed me growing
‘ of late very serious ; that he knew the occasion, and
‘ neither wondered at, nor blamed me. He then asked
‘ me if I had any prospect of going again into the
‘ army ; if not, what scheme of life I proposed to
‘ myself.’

‘ I told him, that as I had no powerful friends,
‘ I could have but little expectations in a military way ;
‘ that I was as-incapable of thinking of any other
‘ scheme, as all business required some knowledge or
‘ experience, and likewise money to set up with ; of
‘ all which I was destitute.

“ You must know then,” child, said the doctor,
“ that I have been thinking on this subject as well as
“ you : for I can think, I promise you, with a plea-
“ sant countenance.” These were his words. “ As to
“ the army, perhaps means might be found of getting
“ you another commission ; but my daughter seems
“ to have a violent objection to it ; and to be plain,
“ I fancy you yourself will find no glory make you
“ amends for your absence from her. And for my
“ part,” said he, “ I never think those men wise
“ who for any worldly interest forego the greatest
“ happiness of their lives. If I mistake not,” says he,
“ a country life, where you could be always together,
“ would make you both much happier people.”

‘ I answered, that of all things I preferred it
‘ most ; and I believed Amelia was of the same
‘ opinion.

‘ The doctor, after a little hesitation, proposed to
‘ me to turn farmer, and offered to let me his parson-
‘ age, which was then become vacant. He said, it
‘ was a farm which required but little stock, and that
‘ little should not be wanting.

‘ I embraced this offer very eagerly, and with
‘ great thankfulness, and immediately repaired to
‘ Amelia to communicate it to her, and to know her
‘ sentiments.

‘ Amelia received the news with the highest tran-
‘ sports of joy ; she said that her greatest fear had al-
‘ ways

‘ ways been of my entring again into the army. She
‘ was so kind as to say, that all stations of life were
‘ equal to her, unless as one afforded her more of my
‘ company than another.’ “ And as to our children,”
said she, “ let us breed them up to an humble for-
‘ tune; and they will be contented with it: for none,”
‘ added my angel,’ “ deserves happiness, or indeed,
‘ are capable of it, who make any particular station
‘ a necessary ingredient.”

‘ Thus, madam, you see me degraded from my
‘ former rank in life; no longer Captain Booth, but
‘ Farmer Booth at your service.

‘ During my first year’s continuance in this new
‘ scene of life, nothing, I think, remarkable hap-
‘ pened; the history of one day would, indeed, be
‘ the history of the whole year.’

‘ Well, pray then,’ said Miss Matthews, do let
‘ us hear the history of that Day; I have a strange
‘ curiosity to know how you could kill your time;
‘ and do, if possible, find out the very best day you
‘ can.’

‘ If you command me, madam,’ answered Booth,
‘ you must yourself be accountable for the dulness of
‘ the narrative. Nay, I believe, you have imposed
‘ a very difficult task on me; for the greatest happi-
‘ ness is incapable of description.’

‘ I rose then, madam.’

‘ O the moment you waked, undoubtedly,’ said
Miss Matthews.—

‘ Usually,’ said he, ‘ between five and six.’

‘ I will have no usually,’ cried Miss Matthews,
‘ you are confined to a day, and it is to be the best
‘ and happiest in the year.’

‘ Nay, madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ then I must tell you
‘ the day in which Amelia was brought to bed, after
‘ a painful and dangerous labour; for that I think
‘ was the happiest day of my life.’

‘ I protest,’ said she, ‘ you are become farmer
‘ Booth, indeed. What a happiness have you paint-
‘ ed to my imagination! you put me in mind of a
‘ news-paper, where my lady such-a-one is delivered

‘ of a son, to the great joy of some illustrious family.

‘ Why then, I do assure you, Miss Matthews,’ cries Booth, ‘ I scarce know a circumstance that distinguished one day from another. The whole was one continued series of love, health, and tranquillity. Our lives resembled a calm sea.’—

‘ The dullest of all ideas,’ cries the lady.

‘ I know,’ said he, ‘ it must appear dull in description; for who can describe the pleasures which the morning air gives to one in perfect health; the flow of spirits which springs up from exercise; the delights which parents feel from the prattle, and innocent follies of their children; the joy with which the tender smile of a wife inspires a husband; or lastly, the chearful, solid comfort which a fond couple enjoy in each other’s conversation.—All these pleasures, and every other of which our situation was capable, we tasted in the highest degree. Our happiness was, perhaps, too great; for fortune seemed to grow envious of it, and interposed one of the most cruel accidents that could have befallen us, by robbing us of our dear friend the doctor.’

‘ I am sorry for it,’ said Miss Matthews. ‘ He was indeed a valuable man, and I never heard of his death before.’

‘ Long may it be before any one hears of it,’ cries Booth. ‘ He is, indeed, dead to us; but will, I hope, enjoy many happy years of life. You know, madam, the obligations he had to his patron the earl: indeed, it was impossible to be once in his company without hearing of them: I am sure you will neither wonder that he was chosen to attend the young lord in his travels as his tutor, nor that the good man, however disagreeable it might be (as in fact it was) to his inclination, should comply with the earnest request of his friend and patron.

‘ By this means I was bereft not only of the best companion in the world, but of the best counsellor; a loss of which I have since felt the bitter consequence; for no greater advantage, I am convinced,

‘ can

‘ can arrive to a young man who hath any degree
‘ of understanding, than an intimate converse with
‘ one of riper years, who is not only able to advise,
‘ but who knows the manner of advising. By this
‘ means alone, youth can enjoy the benefit of the
‘ experience of age, and that at a time of life when
‘ such experience will be of more service to a man
‘ than when he hath lived long enough to acquire it
‘ of himself.

‘ From want of my sage counsellor, I now fell
‘ into many errors. The first of these was in enlarg-
‘ ing my business, by adding a farm of one hundred
‘ a year to the parsonage; in renting which I had also
‘ as bad a bargain as the doctor had before given me
‘ a good one. The consequence of which was, that
‘ whereas at the end of the first year, I was worth
‘ upwards of fourscore pounds; at the end of the
‘ second, I was near half that sum worse (as the phrase
‘ is) than nothing.

‘ A second folly I was guilty of, in uniting families
‘ with the curate of the parish, who had just married,
‘ as my wife and I thought, a very good sort of a wo-
‘ man. We had not, however, lived one month to-
‘ gether before I plainly perceived this good sort of
‘ woman had taken a great prejudice against my Ame-
‘ lia; for which, if I had not known something of
‘ the human passions, and that high place which envy
‘ holds among them, I should not have been able to
‘ account: for so far was my angel from having given
‘ her any cause of dislike, that she had treated her not
‘ only with civility, but kindness.

‘ Besides superiority in beauty, which, I believe,
‘ all the world would have allowed to Amelia, there
‘ was another cause of this envy, which I am almost
‘ ashamed to mention, as it may well be called my
‘ greatest folly. You are to know then, madam, that
‘ from a boy I had been always fond of driving a
‘ coach, in which I valued myself on having some
‘ skill. This, perhaps, was an innocent, but I allow
‘ it to have been a childish vanity. As I had an op-
‘ portunity, therefore, of buying an old coach and
‘ harness very cheap, (indeed they cost me but twelve
‘ pounds,

‘ pounds) and as I considered the same horses which
‘ drew my waggon, would likewise draw my coach,
‘ I resolved on indulging myself in the purchase.

‘ The consequence of setting up this poor old coach
‘ is inconceivable. Before this, as my wife and my-
‘ self had very little distinguished ourselves from the
‘ other farmers and their wives, either in our dress,
‘ or our way of living, they treated us as their equals ;
‘ but now they began to consider us as elevating our-
‘ selves into a state of superiority, and immediately
‘ began to envy, hate, and declare war against us.
‘ The neighbouring little squires too, were uneasy to
‘ see a poor renter become their equal in a matter in
‘ which they placed so much dignity ; and not doubt-
‘ ing but it arose in me from the same ostentation,
‘ they began to hate me likewise, and to turn my
‘ equipage into ridicule ; asserting that my horses,
‘ which were as well matched as any in the kingdom,
‘ were of different colours and sizes ; with much more
‘ of that kind of wit, the only basis of which is lying.

‘ But what will appear most surprising to you, ma-
‘ dam, was, that the curate’s wife, who being lame,
‘ had more use of the coach than my Amelia, (indeed,
‘ she seldom went to church in any other manner)
‘ was one of my bitterest enemies on the occasion.
‘ If she had ever any dispute with Amelia, which all
‘ the sweetness of my poor girl could not sometimes
‘ avoid, she was sure to introduce with a malicious
‘ sneer, “ Though my husband doth not keep a
“ coach, madam.” “ Nay, she took this opportunity
‘ to upbraid my wife with the loss of her fortune, al-
‘ ledging, “ That some folks might have had as good
‘ pretensions to a coach as other folks, and a better
‘ too, as they brought a better fortune to their hus-
‘ bands. But that all people had not the art of mak-
‘ ing brick without straw.

‘ You will wonder, perhaps, madam, how I can
‘ remember such stuff, which, indeed, was a long
‘ time only matter of amusement to both Amelia and
‘ myself ; but we, at last, experienced the mischievous
‘ nature of envy, and that it tends rather to produce
‘ tragical than comical events. My neighbours now
‘ began

‘ began to conspire against me. They nicked-named
‘ me, in derision, the Squire Farmer. Whatever I
‘ bought, I was sure to buy dearer ; and when I sold,
‘ I was obliged to sell cheaper than any other. In
‘ fact, they were all united ; and while they every day
‘ committed trespasses on my lands with impunity, if
‘ any of my cattle escaped into their fields, I was
‘ either forced to enter into a law-suit, or to make
‘ amends four-fold for the damage sustained.

‘ The consequences of all this could be no other
‘ than that ruin which ensued. Without tiring you
‘ with particulars, before the end of four years, I
‘ became involved in debt near three hundred pound,
‘ more than the value of all my effects. My land-lord
‘ seized my stock for rent ; and to avoid immediate
‘ confinement in prison, I was forced to leave the
‘ country, with all that I hold dear in the world, my
‘ wife, and my poor little family.

‘ In this condition, I arrived in town five or six
‘ days ago. I had just taken a lodging in the verge
‘ of the court, and had writ my dear Amelia word,
‘ where she might find me, when she had settled her
‘ affairs in the best manner she could. That very even-
‘ ing, as I was returning home from a coffee-house,
‘ a fray happening in the street, I endeavoured to assist
‘ the injured party, when I was seized by the watch,
‘ and after being confined all night in the round-
‘ house, was conveyed in the morning before a justice
‘ of peace, who committed me hither ; where I should
‘ probably have starved, had I not, from your hands,
‘ found a most unaccountable preservation. — And
‘ here, give me leave to assure you, my dear Miss
‘ Matthews, that whatever advantage I may have
‘ reaped from your misfortune, I sincerely lament
‘ it ; nor would I have purchased any relief to my-
‘ self at the price of seeing you in this dreadful place.’

He spake these last words with great tenderness ; for
he was a man of consummate good-nature, and had
formerly had much affection for this young lady ; in-
deed, more than the generality of people are capable
of entertaining for any person whatsoever.

A M E L I A.

B O O K IV.

C H A P. I.

Containing very mysterious matter.

MISS Matthews did not in the least fall short of Mr. Booth in expressions of tenderness. Her eyes, the most eloquent orators on such occasions, exerted their utmost force; and, at the conclusion of his speech, she cast a look as languishingly sweet, as ever Cleopatra gave to Anthony. In real fact, this Mr. Booth had been her first love, and had made more impressions on her young heart, which the learned in this branch of philosophy affirm, and perhaps truly, are never to be eradicated.

When Booth had finished his story, a silence ensued of some minutes; an interval which the painter would describe much better than the writer. Some readers may however be able to make pretty pertinent conjectures, by what I have said above, especially when they are told that Miss Matthews broke the silence by a sigh, and cried, ‘why is Mr. Booth unwilling to allow me the happiness of thinking my misfortunes have been of some little advantage to him? sure the happy Amelia would not be so selfish to envy me that pleasure. No; not if she was as much the fondest as she is the happiest of women.’ ‘Good Heavens! madam,’ said he, ‘do you call my poor Amelia the happiest of women?’ ‘Indeed I do,’ answered she briskly,—‘O Mr. Booth, there is a speck of white in her fortune, which when it falls to the lot of a sensible woman, makes her full amends for
all

all the crosses which can attend her—Perhaps she may not be sensible of it; but if it had been my blest fate—O Mr. Booth, could I have thought when we were first acquainted, that the most agreeable man in the world had been capable of making the kind, the tender, the affectionate husband—the happy Amelia in those days was unknown; Heaven had not then given her a prospect of the happiness it intended her—but yet it did intend it her: for sure there is a fatality in the affairs of love; and the more I reflect on my own life, the more I am convinced of it. O Heavens! how a thousand little circumstances crowd into my mind. When you first marched into our town, you had then the colours in your hand; as you passed under the window where I stood, my glove by accident dropt into the street; you stooped, took up my glove, and putting it upon the spike belonging to your colours, lifted it up to the window. Upon this, a young lady, who stood by, said, so Miss, the young officer hath accepted your challenge. I blushed then, and I blush now, when I confess to you, I thought you the prettiest young fellow I had ever seen; and, upon my soul, I believe you was then the prettiest fellow in the world.—Booth here made a low bow, and cried—O dear madam, how ignorant was I of my own happiness.’ ‘Would you really have thought so?’ answered she, ‘however, there is some politeness, if there be no sincerity in what you say.’ Here the governor of the enchanted castle interrupted them, and entering the room without any ceremony, acquainted the lady and gentleman, that it was locking-up time; and addressing Booth, by the name of captain, asked him if he would not please to have a bed; adding, that he might have one in the next room to the lady, but that it would come dear; for that he never let a bed in that room under a guinea, nor could he afford it cheaper to his father.

No answer was made to this proposal; but Miss Matthews, who had already learnt some of the ways of the house, said, she believed Mr. Booth would like to drink a glass of something; upon which the go-

vernor immediately trumpeted forth the praises of his rack-punch, and without waiting for any farther commands, presently produced a large bowl of that liquor.

The governor having recommended the goodness of his punch by a hearty draught, began to revive the other matter, saying, that he was just going to bed, and must first lock up.—‘But suppose,’ said Miss Matthews, with a smile, ‘the captain and I should have a mind to sit up all night.’—‘With all my heart,’ said the governor; ‘but I expect a consideration for those matters. For my part, I don’t enquire into what doth not concern me; but single and double are two things. If I lock up double, I expect half a guinea; and I’m sure the captain cannot think that’s out of the way—It is but the price of a bagnio.’

Miss Matthews’s face became of the colour of scarlet at those words—However, she mustered up her spirits, and turning to Booth, said, ‘what say you, captain? for my own part, I had never less inclination to sleep; which hath the greater charms for you, the punch or the pillow?’ ‘I hope madam,’ answered Booth, ‘you have a better opinion of me, than to doubt my preferring Miss Matthews’s conversation to either.’ ‘I assure you,’ replied she, ‘it is no compliment to you, to say I prefer yours to sleep at this time.’

The governor then, having received his fee, departed; and turning the key, left the gentleman and lady to themselves.

In imitation of him, we will lock up likewise a scene which we do not think proper to expose to the eyes of the public. If any over curious readers should be disappointed on this occasion, we will recommend such readers to the apologies with which certain gay ladies have lately been pleased to oblige the world, where they will possibly find every thing recorded, that past at this interval.

But though we decline painting the scene, it is not our intention to conceal from the world the frailty of Mr. Booth, or of his fair partner, who certainly past
that

that evening, in a manner inconsistent with the strict rules of virtue and chastity.

To say the truth, we are much more concerned for the behaviour of the gentleman, than of the lady, not only for his sake, but for the sake of the best woman in the world, whom we should be sorry to consider as yoked to a man of no worth nor honour.

We desire therefore the good-natured and candid reader will be pleased to weigh attentively the several unlucky circumstances which concurred so critically, that fortune seemed to have used her utmost endeavours to ensnare poor Booth's constancy. Let the reader set before his eyes a fine young woman, in a manner a first love, conferring obligations, and using every art to soften, to allure, to win, and to inflame; let him consider the time and place; let him remember that Mr. Booth was a young fellow in the highest vigour of life; and lastly, let him add one single circumstance, that the parties were alone together; and then if he will not acquit the defendant, he must be convicted; for I have nothing more to say in his defence.

CH A P. II.

The latter part of which we expect will please our reader better than the former.

A Whole week did our lady and gentleman live in this criminal conversation, in which the happiness of the former was much more perfect than that of the latter; for though the charms of Miss Matthews, and her excessive endearments, sometimes lulled every thought in the sweet lethargy of pleasure; yet in the intervals of his fits, his virtue alarmed and roused him, and brought the image of poor injured Amelia to haunt and torment him. In fact, if we regard this world only, it is the interest of every man to be either perfectly good, or completely bad. He had better destroy his conscience, than gently wound it. The many bitter reflections which every bad action costs

costs a mind in which there are any remains of goodness, are not to be compensated by the highest pleasures which such an action can produce.

So it happened to Mr. Booth. Repentance never failed to follow his transgressions; and yet so perverse is our judgment, and so slippery is the descent of vice, when once we are entered into it; the same crime which he now repented of, became a reason for doing that which was to cause his future repentance; and he continued to sin on, because he had begun. His repentance however returned still heavier and heavier, till at last it flung him into a melancholy, which Miss Matthews plainly perceived, and at which she could not avoid expressing some resentment in obscure hints, and ironical compliments on Amelia's superiority to her whole sex, who could not cloy a gay young fellow by many years possession. She would then repeat the compliments which others had made to her own beauty—and could not forbear once crying out: 'Upon my soul! my dear Billy, I believe the chief disadvantage on my side, is in my superior fondness; for love, in the minds of men, hath one quality at least of a fever, which is to prefer coldness in the object. Confess, dear Will, is there not something vastly refreshing in the cool air of a prude?'—Booth fetched a deep sigh, and begged her never more to mention Amelia's name.—'O Will,' cries she, 'did that request proceed from the motive I could wish, I should be the happiest of womankind.—You would not sure, madam,' said Booth, 'desire a sacrifice, which I must be a villain to make to any?' 'Desire!' answered she, 'are there any bounds to the desires of love! have not I been sacrificed? hath not my first love been torn from my bleeding heart?—I claim a prior right—As for sacrifices, I can make them too? and would sacrifice the whole world at the least call of my love.'

Here she delivered a letter to Booth, which she had received within an hour, the contents of which were these:

'Dearest

‘ Dearest madam,

‘ **T**HOSE only who truly know what love is, can
‘ have any conception of the horrors I felt at
‘ hearing of your confinement at my arrival in town,
‘ which was this morning. I immediately sent my
‘ lawyer to enquire into the particulars, who brought
‘ me the agreeable news that the man whose heart’s
‘ blood ought not to be valued at the rate of a single
‘ hair of yours, is entirely out of all danger, and
‘ that you might be admitted to bail. I presently
‘ ordered him to go with two of my tradesmen, who
‘ are to be bound in any sum for your appearance, if
‘ he should be mean enough to prosecute you. Though
‘ you may expect my attorney with you soon, I would
‘ not delay sending this, as I hope the news will be
‘ agreeable to you. My chariot will attend at the
‘ same time to carry you wherever you please. You
‘ may easily guess what a violence I have done to my-
‘ self in not waiting on you in person ; but I, who
‘ know your delicacy, feared it might offend, and
‘ that you might think me ungenerous enough to
‘ hope from your distresses an happiness, which I am
‘ resolved to owe to your free gift alone, when your
‘ good-nature shall induce you to bestow on me what
‘ no man living can merit. I beg you will pardon
‘ all the contents of this hasty letter, and do me the
‘ honour of believing me,

‘ Dearest madam,

‘ Your most passionate admirer,

‘ and most obedient humble servant,

‘ DAMON.’

Booth thought he had somewhere before seen the same hand ; but in his present hurry of spirits could not recollect whose it was ; nor did the lady give him any time for reflection : for he had scarce read the letter when she produced a little bit of paper, and cried out, ‘ here, Sir, here are the contents which he fears will offend me.’ She then put a bank-bill of a hundred pound into Mr. Booth’s hands, and asked him

him with a smile, if he did not think she had reason to be offended with so much insolence.

Before Booth could return any answer, the governor arrived and introduced Mr. Rogers the attorney, who acquainted the lady that he had brought her discharge from her confinement, and that a chariot waited at the door to attend her wherever she pleased.

She received the discharge from Mr. Rogers, and said she was very much obliged to the gentleman who employed him, but that she would not make use of the chariot, as she had no notion of leaving that wretched place in a triumphant manner : in which resolution, when the attorney found her obstinate, he withdrew, as did the governor with many bows, and as many ladyships.

They were no sooner gone, than Booth asked the lady why she would refuse the chariot of a gentleman who had behaved with such excessive respect. She looked earnestly upon him, and cried, ‘ How unkind
‘ is that question ! do you imagine I would go and
‘ leave you in such a situation ? thou knowest but little of Calista. Why, do you think I would accept
‘ this hundred pound from a man I dislike, unless it
‘ was to be serviceable to the man I love ? I insist on
‘ your taking it as your own, and using whatever you
‘ want of it.’

Booth protested in the solemnest manner, that he would not touch a shilling of it, saying, he had already received too many obligations at her hands, and more than ever he should be able, he feared, to repay. ‘ How
‘ unkind,’ answered she, ‘ is every word you say ?
‘ why will you mention obligations ? love never confers any. It doth every thing for its own sake. I am
‘ not therefore obliged to the man whose passion makes
‘ him generous : for I feel how inconsiderable the
‘ whole world would appear to me, if I could throw
‘ it after my heart.’

Much more of this kind past, she still pressing the bank-note upon him, and he as absolutely refusing, till Booth left the lady to dress herself, and went to walk in the area of the prison.

Miss Matthews now applied to the governor to know by what means she might procure the captain his liberty. The governor answered, ‘as he cannot get bail, it will be a difficult matter; and money to be sure there must be: for people, no doubt, expect to touch on these occasions. When prisoners have not wherewithal as the law requires to entitle themselves to justice, why they must be beholden to other people, to give them their liberty; and people will not to be sure suffer others to be beholden to them for nothing, whereof there is good reason: for how should we all live, if it was not for these things!—Well, well,’ said she, ‘and how much will it cost.’—‘How much!’ answered he,—‘How much! why, let me see.’—Here he hesitated some time, and then answered, ‘that for five guineas he would undertake to procure the captain his discharge.’ That being the sum which he computed to remain in the lady’s pocket; for as to the gentleman’s, he had long been acquainted with the emptiness of it.

Miss Matthews, to whom money was as dirt, (indeed she may be thought not to have known the value of it) delivered him the bank-bill, and bid him get it changed: for if the whole, says she, will procure him his liberty, he shall have it this evening.

‘The whole, madam,’ answered the governor, as soon as he had recovered his breath: for it almost forsook him at the sight of the black word hundred. ‘No, no.—There might be people indeed—but I am not one of those. A hundred! no, nor nothing like it.—As for myself, as I said, I will be content with five guineas, and I am sure that’s little enough. What other people will expect, I cannot exactly say.—To be sure his worship’s clerk will expect to touch pretty handsomely; as for his worship himself, he never touches any thing, that is, not to speak of; but then the constable will expect something, and the watchmen must have something, and the lawyers on both sides they must have their fees for finishing.’—‘Well,’ said she, ‘I leave all to you. If it costs me twenty pound I will have him discharged this afternoon.—But you must give his discharge into my hands,

‘ hands, without letting the captain know any thing
‘ of the matter.’

The governor promised to obey her commands in every particular ; nay, he was so very industrious, that though dinner was just then coming upon the table, at her earnest request, he set out immediately on the purpose, and went, as he said, in pursuit of the lawyer.

All the other company assembled at table as usual, where poor Booth was the only person out of spirits. This was imputed by all present to a wrong cause ; nay, Miss Matthews herself either could not, or would not, suspect that there was any thing deeper than the despair of being speedily discharged, that lay heavy on his mind.

However, the mirth of the rest, and a pretty liberal quantity of punch, which he swallowed after dinner (for Miss Matthews had ordered a very large bowl at her own expence, to entertain the good company at her farewell) so far exhilarated his spirits, that, when the young lady and he retired to their tea, he had all the marks of gaiety in his countenance, and his eyes sparkled with good humour.

The gentleman and lady had spent about two hours in tea and conversation, when the governor returned, and privately delivered to the lady the discharge for her friend, and the sum of eighty-two pounds five shillings ; the rest having been, he said, disbursed in the business, of which he was ready at any time to render an exact account.

Miss Matthews being again alone with Mr. Booth, she put the discharge into his hands, desiring him to ask her no questions ; and adding, ‘ I think, sir, we
‘ have neither of us now any thing more to do at this
‘ place.’ She then summoned the governor, and ordered a bill of that day’s expence, for long scores were not usual there ; and at the same time ordered a hackney-coach, without having yet determined whither she would go, but fully determined she was, wherever she went, to take Mr. Booth with her.

The governor was now approaching with a long roll of paper, when a faint voice was heard to cry out hastily, where is he ?—and presently a female spectre,
all

all pale and breathless, rushed into the room, and fell into Mr. Booth's arms, where she immediately fainted away.

Booth made a shift to support his lovely burthen; though he was himself in a condition very little different from hers. Miss Matthews likewise, who presently recollected the face of Amelia, was struck motionless with the surprize; nay, the governor himself, though not easily moved at sight of horror, stood aghast, and neither offered to speak nor stir.

Happily for Amelia, the governess of the mansion had out of curiosity followed her into the room, and was the only useful person present on this occasion; she immediately called for water, and ran to the lady's assistance, fell to loosening her stays, and performed all the offices proper at such a season; which had so good an effect, that Amelia soon recovered the disorder which the violent agitation of her spirits had caused, and found herself alive and awake in her husband's arms.

Some tender caresses, and a soft whisper or two passed privately between Booth and his lady; nor was it without great difficulty, that poor Amelia put some restraint on her fondness, in a place so improper for a tender interview. She now cast her eyes round the room, and fixing them on Miss Matthews, who stood like a statue; she soon recollected her, and addressing her by her name, said, 'Sure, madam, I cannot be mistaken in those features; though meeting you here might almost make me suspect my memory.'

Miss Matthews's face was now all covered with scarlet. The reader may easily believe she was on no account pleased with Amelia's presence; indeed, she expected from her some of those insults, of which virtuous women are generally so liberal to a frail sister; but she was mistaken, Amelia was not one,

Who thought the nation ne'er could thrive,
Till all the whores were burnt alive.

Her virtue could support itself with its own intrinsic worth, without borrowing any assistance from the vices of other women; and she considered their natural infirmities

mities as the objects of pity, not of contempt or abhorrence.

When Amelia therefore perceived the visible confusion in Miss Matthews, she presently called to remembrance some stories which she had imperfectly heard ; for as she was not naturally attentive to scandal, and had kept very little company since her return to England, she was far from being a mistress of the lady's whole history. However, she had heard enough to impute her confusion to the right cause ; she advanced to her, and told her she was extremely sorry to meet her in such a place, but hoped that no very great misfortune was the occasion of it.

Miss Matthews began, by degrees, to recover her spirits. She answered with a reserved air, ' I am much obliged to you, madam, for your concern ; we are all liable to misfortunes in this world. Indeed, I know not why I should be much ashamed of being in any place where I am in such good company.'

Here Booth interposed. He had before acquainted Amelia in a whisper, that his confinement was at an end. ' The unfortunate accident, my dear,' said he, ' which brought this young lady to this melancholy place, is entirely determined ; and she is now as absolutely at her liberty as myself.'

Amelia imputing the extreme coldness and reserve of the lady to the cause already mentioned, advanced still more and more in proportion as she drew back : till the governor, who had withdrawn some time, returned, and acquainted Miss Matthews that her coach was at the door ; upon which, the company soon separated. Amelia and Booth went together in Amelia's coach, and poor Miss Matthews was obliged to retire alone, after having satisfied the demands of the governor, which in one day only had amounted to a pretty considerable sum : for he with great dexterity proportioned the bills to the abilities of his guests.

It may seem perhaps wonderful to some readers, that Miss Matthews should have maintained that cold reserve towards Amelia, so as barely to keep within the rules of civility, instead of embracing an opportunity which seemed to offer, of gaining some degree of intimacy

macy with a wife, whose husband she was so fond of; but besides that, her spirits were entirely disconcerted by so sudden and unexpected a disappointment; and besides the extreme horrors which she conceived at the presence of her rival, there is, I believe, something so outrageously suspicious in the nature of all vice, especially when joined with any great degree of pride, that the eyes of those whom we imagine privy to our failings, are intolerable to us, and we are apt to aggravate their opinions to our disadvantage far beyond the reality.

C H A P. III.

Containing wise observations of the author, and other matters.

TH E R E is nothing more difficult than to lay down any fixed and certain rules for happiness; or indeed to judge with any precision of the happiness of others, from the knowledge of external circumstances. There is sometimes a little speck of black in the brightest and gayest colours of fortune, which contaminates and deadens the whole. On the contrary, when all without looks dark and dismal, there is often a secret ray of light within the mind, which turns every thing to real joy and gladness.

I have in the course of my life seen many occasions to make this observation; and Mr. Booth was at present a very pregnant instance of its truth. He was just delivered from a prison, and in the possession of his beloved wife and children; and (which might be imagined greatly to augment his joy) fortune had done all this for him within an hour, without giving him the least warning or reasonable expectation of this strange reverse in his circumstances; and yet it is certain, that there were very few men in the world, more seriously miserable than he was at this instant. A deep melancholy seized his mind, and cold damp sweats overspread his person, so that he was scarce animated; and poor Amelia, instead of a fond warm husband, bestowed her caresses on a dull lifeless lump of clay. He endeavoured however at first, as much as possible, to conceal what he felt, and attempted what is the hardest
of

of all tasks, to act the part of a happy man ; but he found no supply of spirits to carry on this deceit, and would have probably sunk under his attempt, had not poor Amelia's simplicity helped him to another fallacy, in which he had much better success.

This worthy woman very plainly perceived the disorder in her husband's mind ; and having no doubt of the cause of it, especially when she saw the tears stand in his eyes at the sight of his children, threw her arms round his neck, and embracing him with rapturous fondness, cried out, ' my dear Billy, let nothing make you uneasy. Heaven will, I doubt not, provide for us and these poor babes. Great fortunes are not necessary to happiness. For my own part, I can level my mind with any state ; and for those poor little things, whatever condition of life we breed them to, that will be sufficient to maintain them in. How many thousands abound in affluence, whose fortunes are much lower than ours ! for it is not from nature, but from education and habit, that our wants are chiefly derived. Make yourself easy therefore, my dear love ; for you have a wife who will think herself happy with you, and endeavour to make you so in any situation. Fear nothing, Billy ; industry will always provide us a wholesome meal ; and I will take care, that neatness and chearfulness shall make it a pleasant one.'

Booth presently took the cue, which she had given him. He fixed his eyes on her for a minute, with great earnestness and inexpressible tenderness ; and then cried, ' O my Amelia, how much are you my superior in every perfection ! how wise, how great, how noble are your sentiments ! why can I not imitate what I so much admire ? why can I not look with your constancy, on those dear little pledges of our loves ? All my philosophy is baffled with the thought, that my Amelia's children are to struggle with a cruel, hard, unfeeling world, and to buffet those waves of fortune, which have overwhelmed their father.—Here I own I want your firmness, and am not without an excuse for wanting it ; for am I not the cruel cause of all your wretchedness ? have I not

‘ I not stept between you and fortune, and been the
‘ cursed obstacle to all your greatness and happi-
‘ ness ?’

‘ Say not so, my love, answered she. Great I might
‘ have been, but never happy with any other man.
‘ Indeed, dear Billy, I laugh at the fears you former-
‘ ly raised in me ; what seemed so terrible at a di-
‘ stance, now it approaches nearer, appears to have
‘ been a mere bugbear—and let this comfort you,
‘ that I look on myself at this day as the happiest of
‘ women ; nor I have done any thing which I do not
‘ rejoice in, and would, if I had the gift of presci-
‘ ence, do again.’

Booth was so overcome with this behaviour, that he had no words to answer. To say the truth, it was difficult to find any worthy of the occasion. He threw himself prostrate at her feet, whence poor Amelia was forced to use all her strength as well as entreaties to raise, and place him in his chair.

Such is ever the fortitude of perfect innocence, and such the depression of guilt in minds not utterly abandoned. Booth was naturally of a sanguine temper ; nor would any such apprehensions as he mentioned have been sufficient to have restrained his joy, at meeting with his Amelia. In fact, a reflection on the injury he had done her was the sole cause of his grief. This it was that enervated his heart, and threw him into agonies, which all that profusion of heroic tenderness that the most excellent of women intended for his comfort, served only to heighten and aggravate ; as the more she rose in his admiration, the more she quickened his sense of his own unworthiness.

After a disagreeable evening, the first of that kind that he had ever past with his Amelia, in which he had the utmost difficulty to force a little cheerfulness, and in which her spirits were at length overpowered by discerning the oppression on his, they retired to rest, or rather to misery, which need not be described.

The next morning at breakfast, Booth began to recover a little from his melancholy, and to taste the company of his children. He now first thought of enquiring of Amelia, by what means she had discover-
ed

ed the place of his confinement. Amelia, after gently rebuking him for not having himself acquainted her with it, informed him, that it was known all over the country, and that she had traced the original of it to her sister ; who had spread the news with a malicious joy, and added a circumstance, which would have frightened her to death, had not her knowledge of him made her give little credit to it, which was, that he was committed for murder. But though she had discredited this part, she said, the not hearing from him, during several successive posts, made her too apprehensive of the rest. That she got a conveyance therefore for herself and children to Salisbury ; from whence the stage-coach had brought them to town, and having deposited the children at his lodging, of which he had sent her an account on his first arrival in town, she took a hack, and came directly to the prison where she heard he was, and where she found him.

Booth excused himself, and with truth as to his not having writ : for in fact, he had writ twice from the prison, though he had mentioned nothing of his confinement ; but as he sent away his letters after nine at night, the fellow, to whom they were entrusted, had burnt them both for the sake of putting the two pence in his own pocket, or rather in the pocket of the keeper of the next gin-shop.

As to the account which Amelia gave him, it served rather to raise than to satisfy his curiosity. He began to suspect, that some person had seen both him and Miss Matthews together in the prison, and had confounded her case with his ; and this the circumstance of murder made the more probable. But who this person should be, he could not guess. After giving himself therefore some pains in forming conjectures to no purpose, he was forced to rest contented with his ignorance of the real truth.

Two or three days now past without producing any thing remarkable ; unless it were, that Booth more and more recovered his spirits, and had now almost regained his former degree of cheerfulness, when the following letter arrived, again to torment him :

‘ Dear

‘ Dear Billy,

‘ **T**O convince you I am the most reasonable of
 ‘ women, I have given you up three whole
 ‘ days to the unmolested possession of my fortunate
 ‘ rival; I can refrain no longer from letting you
 ‘ know that I lodge in Dean-street, not far from the
 ‘ church, at the sign of the Pelican and Trumpet;
 ‘ where I expect this evening to see you—Believe me,
 ‘ I am with more affection than any other woman in
 ‘ the world can be,

‘ My dear Billy,

‘ Your affectionate, fond, doating

‘ F. MATTHEWS.’

Booth tore the letter with rage, and threw it into the fire; resolving never to visit the lady more, unless it was to pay her the money she had lent him, which he was determined to do the very first opportunity: for it was not at present in his power.

This letter threw him back into his fit of dejection, in which he had not continued long, when a packet from the country brought him the following from his friend Dr. Harrison:

Lyons, January 21. N. S.

‘ S I R,

‘ **T**HOUGH I am now on my return home, I
 ‘ have taken up my pen to communicate to
 ‘ you some news I have heard from England, which
 ‘ gives me much uneasiness, and concerning which I
 ‘ can indeed deliver my sentiments with much more ease
 ‘ this way than any other. In my answer to your
 ‘ last, I very freely gave you my opinion, in which
 ‘ it was my misfortune to disapprove of every step
 ‘ you had taken; but those were all pardonable er-
 ‘ rors. Can you be so partial to yourself, upon cool
 ‘ and sober reflection, to think what I am going to
 ‘ mention is so? I promise you, it appears to me a
 ‘ folly of so monstrous a kind, that, had I heard it
 ‘ from any but a person of the highest honour, I
 ‘ should have rejected it as utterly incredible. I hope
 ‘ you already guess what I am about to name; since,

‘ Heaven forbid, your conduct should afford you any
 ‘ choice of such gross instances of weakness. In a
 ‘ word, then, you have set up an equipage. What
 ‘ shall I invent in your excuse, either to others, or to
 ‘ myself? In truth, I can find no excuse for you, and
 ‘ what is more, I am certain you can find none for
 ‘ yourself. I must deal therefore very plainly and
 ‘ sincerely with you. Vanity is always contempti-
 ‘ ble; but when joined with dishonesty, it becomes
 ‘ odious and detestable. At whose expence are you
 ‘ to support this equipage? is it not entirely at the
 ‘ expence of others; and will it not finally end in
 ‘ that of your poor wife and children? you know
 ‘ you are two years in arrears to me. If I could im-
 ‘ pute this to any extraordinary or common accident,
 ‘ I think I should never have mentioned it; but I
 ‘ will not suffer my money to support the ridiculous,
 ‘ and, I must say, criminal vanity of any one. I ex-
 ‘ pect therefore to find at my return, that you have
 ‘ either discharged my whole debt, or your equipage.
 ‘ Let me beg you seriously to consider your circum-
 ‘ stances and condition in life, and to remember that
 ‘ your situation will not justify any the least unne-
 ‘ cessary expence. *Simply to be poor, says my favour-*
 ‘ *ite Greek historian, was not held scandalous by the*
 ‘ *wise Athenians, but highly so, to owe that poverty to*
 ‘ *our own indiscretion.* Present my affection^s to Mrs.
 ‘ Booth, and be assured, that I shall not, without
 ‘ great reason, and great pain too, ever cease to be,

‘ Your most faithful friend,

‘ R. HARRISON.’

Had this letter come at any other time, it would
 have given Booth the most sensible affliction; but so
 totally had the affair of Miss Matthews possessed his
 mind, that, like a man in a most raging fit of the
 gout, he was scarce capable of any additional tor-
 ture; nay, he even made an use of this latter epistle,
 as it served to account to Amelia for that concern
 which he really felt on another account. The poor
 deceived lady therefore applied herself to give him
 comfort where he least wanted it. She said he might

easily perceive that the matter had been misrepresented to the doctor, who would not, she was sure, retain the least anger against him when he knew the real truth.

After a short conversation on this subject, in which Booth appeared to be greatly consoled by the arguments of his wife, they parted. He went to take a walk in the Park, and she remained at home to prepare him his dinner.

He was no sooner departed than his little boy, not quite six years old, said to Amelia, ‘La! mamma, what is the matter with poor papa? what makes him look so as if he was going to cry? he is not half so merry as he used to be in the country.’ Amelia answered, ‘Oh! my dear! your papa is only a little thoughtful, he will be merry again soon.’—Then looking fondly on her children, she burst into an agony of tears, and cried, ‘Oh Heavens! what have these poor little infants done? why will the barbarous world endeavour to starve them, by depriving us of our only friend?—O my dear, your father is ruined, and we are undone.’—The children presently accompanied their mother’s tears, and the daughter cried—‘Why, will any body hurt poor papa? hath he done any harm to any body?’—‘No, my dear child,’ said the mother, ‘he is the best man in the world, and therefore they hate him.’ Upon which the boy, who was extremely sensible at his years, answered, ‘Nay, mamma, how can that be? have not you often told me, that if I was good, every body would love me?’ ‘All good people will,’ answered she. ‘Why don’t they love papa then?’ replied the child, ‘for I am sure he is very good.’ ‘So they do, my dear,’ said the mother, ‘but there are more bad people in the world, and they will hate you for your goodness.’ ‘Why then bad people,’ cries the child, ‘are loved by more than the good.’—‘No matter for that, my dear,’ said she, ‘the love of one good person is more worth having, than that of a thousand wicked ones; nay, if there was no such person in the world, still you must be a good boy: for there is one in Heaven who will
I 2 ‘love

‘ love you ; and his love is better for you than that of all mankind.’

This little dialogue we are apprehensive will be read with contempt by many ; indeed we should not have thought it worth recording, was it not for the excellent example which Amelia here gives to all mothers. This admirable woman never let a day pass, without instructing her children in some lesson of religion and morality. By which means she had, in their tender minds, so strongly annexed the ideas of fear and shame to every idea of evil of which they were susceptible, that it must require great pains and length of habit to separate them. Though she was the tenderest of mothers, she never suffered any symptom of malevolence to shew itself in their most trifling actions without discouragement, without rebuke ; and, if it broke forth with any rancour, without punishment. In which she had such success, that not the least marks of pride, envy, malice, or spite discovered itself in any of their little words or deeds.

C H A P. IV.

In which Amelia appears in no unamiable light.

AMELIA, with the assistance of a little girl, who was their only servant, had dressed her dinner ; and she had likewise dressed herself as neat as any lady, who had a regular set of servants, could have done ; when Booth returned, and brought with him his friend James, whom he had met with in the Park ; and who, as Booth absolutely refused to dine away from his wife, to whom he had promised to return, had invited himself to dine with him. Amelia had none of that poultry pride, which possesses so many of her sex, and which disconcerts their tempers, and gives them the air and looks of furies, if their husbands bring in an unexpected guest, without giving them timely warning to provide a sacrifice to their own vanity. Amelia received her husband’s friend with the utmost complaisance and good humour : she made indeed some apology for the homeliness of her dinner ; but it was politely turned as a compliment to Mr. James’s friendship,

ship, which could carry him where he was sure of being so ill entertained; and gave not the least hint how magnificently she would have provided, *had she expected the favour of so much good company*. A phrase which is generally meant to contain not only an apology for the lady of the house, but a tacit satire on her guests for their intrusion, and is at least a strong insinuation that they are not welcome.

Amelia failed not to enquire very earnestly after her old friend Mrs. James, formerly Miss Bath, and was very sorry to find that she was not in town. The truth was, as James had married out of a violent liking of, or appetite to, her person, possession had forfeited him, and he was now grown so heartily tired of his wife, that she had very little of his company; she was forced therefore to content herself with being the mistress of a large house and equipage in the country, ten months in the year by herself. The other two he indulged her with the diversions of the town; but then, though they lodged under the same roof, she had little more of her husband's society, than if they had been one hundred miles a-part. With all this, as she was a woman of calm passions, she made herself contented; for she had never had any violent affection for James; the match was of the prudent kind, and to her advantage: for his fortune, by the death of an uncle, was become very considerable; and she had gained every thing by the bargain but a husband, which her constitution suffered her to be very well satisfied without.

When Amelia, after dinner, retired to her children, James began to talk to his friend concerning his affairs. He advised Booth very earnestly to think of getting again into the army, in which he himself had met with such success, that he had obtained the command of a regiment, to which his brother-in-law was lieutenant-colonel. These preferments they both owed to the favour of fortune only: for though there was no objection to either of their military characters; yet neither of them had any extraordinary desert: and, if merit in the service was a sufficient recommendation, Booth, who had been twice wounded in

the siege, seemed to have the fairest pretensions ; but he remained a poor half-pay lieutenant, and the others were, as we have said, one of them a lieutenant-colonel, and the other had a regiment. Such rises we often see in life, without being able to give any satisfactory account of the means, and therefore ascribe them to the good fortune of the person.

Both Colonel James and his brother-in-law were members of parliament: for as the uncle of the former had left him, together with his estate, an almost certain interest in a borough, so he chose to confer this favour on Colonel Bath ; a circumstance which would have been highly immaterial to mention here, but as it serves to set forth the goodness of James, who endeavoured to make up in kindness to the family, what he wanted in fondness for his wife.

Colonel James then endeavoured all in his power to persuade Booth to think again of a military life, and very kindly offered him his interest towards obtaining him a company in the regiment under his command. Booth must have been a madman in his present circumstances to have hesitated one moment at accepting such an offer, and he well knew Amelia, notwithstanding her aversion to the army, was much too wise to make the least scruple of giving her consent. Nor was he, as it appeared afterwards, mistaken in his opinion of his wife's understanding: for she made not the least objection when it was communicated to her, but contented herself with an express stipulation, that wherever he was commanded to go (for the regiment was now abroad) she would accompany him.

Booth therefore accepted his friend's proposal with a profusion of acknowledgments ; and it was agreed, that Booth should draw up a memorial of his pretensions, which Colonel James undertook to present to some man of power, and to back it with all the force he had.

Nor did the friendship of the colonel stop here. ' You will excuse me, dear Booth,' said he, ' if after what you have told me (for he had been very explicit in revealing his affairs to him) ' I suspect you must
' want

‘ want money at this time. If that be the case, as I am
‘ certain it must be, I have fifty pieces at your ser-
‘ vice.’ This generosity brought the tears into Booth’s
eyes ; and he at length confest, that he had not five
guineas in the house ; upon which, James gave him
a bank-bill for twenty pounds, and said he would
give him thirty more the next time he saw him.

Thus did this generous colonel (for generous he real-
ly was to the highest degree) restore peace and comfort
to this little family ; and by this act of beneficence
make two of the worthiest people, two of the happiest
that evening.

Here, reader, give me leave to stop a minute to
lament that so few are to be found of this benign dis-
position ; that while wantonness, vanity, avarice and
ambition are every day rioting and triumphing in the
follies and weakness, the ruin and desolation of man-
kind, scarce one man in a thousand is capable of tast-
ing the happiness of others. Nay, give me leave to
wonder that pride, which is constantly struggling, and
often imposing on itself to gain some little pre-emi-
nence, should so seldom hint to us the only certain
as well as laudable way of setting ourselves above
another man, and that is by becoming his bene-
factor.

C H A P. V.

*Containing an eulogium upon innocence, and other grave
matters.*

BOOTH past that evening, and all the succeed-
ing day with his Amelia, without the interrup-
tion of almost a single thought concerning Miss Mat-
thews, after having determined to go on the Sunday,
the only day he could venture without the verge in
the present state of his affairs, and pay her what she
had advanced for him in the prison. But she had not
so long patience ; for the third day, while he was sit-
ting with Amelia, a letter was brought to him. As
he knew the hand, he immediately put it in his
pocket unopened, not without such an alteration
in his countenance, that had Amelia, who was then
playing

playing with one of the children, cast her eyes towards him, she must have remarked it. This accident, however, luckily gave him time to recover himself: for Amelia was so deeply engaged with the little one, that she did not even remark the delivery of the letter. The maid soon after returned into the room, saying, the chairman desired to know if there was any answer to the letter.—‘What letter?’ cries Booth.—‘The letter I gave you just now,’ answered the girl.—‘Sure,’ cries Booth, ‘the child is mad; you gave me no letter.’—‘Yes, indeed I did, sir,’ said the poor girl. ‘Why then, as sure as fate,’ cries Booth, ‘I threw it into the fire, in my reverè. Why, child, why did you not tell me it was a letter? bid the chairman come up—stay, I will go down myself; for he will otherwise dirt the stairs with his feet.’

Amelia was gently chiding the girl for her carelessness, when Booth returned, saying, it was very true that she had delivered him a letter from Colonel James, and that perhaps it might be of consequence. ‘However,’ says he, ‘I will step to the coffee-house, and send him an account of this strange accident, which I know he will pardon in my present situation.’

Booth was overjoyed at this escape, which poor Amelia’s total want of all jealousy and suspicion, made it very easy for him to accomplish: but his pleasure was considerably abated, when upon opening the letter, he found it to contain, mixed with several very strong expressions of love, some pretty warm ones of the upbraiding kind; but what most alarmed him was a hint, that it was in her power (Miss Matthews’s) to make Amelia as miserable as herself. Besides, the general knowledge of

— *Furens quid fœmina possit,*

he had more particular reasons to apprehend the rage of a lady, who had given so strong an instance how far she could carry her revenge. She had already sent a chairman to his lodgings, with a positive command not to return without an answer to her letter. This might of itself have possibly occasioned a discovery; and

and he thought he had great reason to fear, that if she did not carry matters so far as purposely and avowedly to reveal the secret to Amelia, her indiscretion would at least effect the discovery of that which he would at any price have concealed. Under these terrors he might, I believe, be considered as the most wretched of human beings.

O innocence, how glorious and happy a portion art thou to the breast that possesses thee? thou fearest neither the eyes nor the tongues of men. Truth, the most powerful of all things, is thy strongest friend; and the brighter the light is, in which thou art displayed, the more it discovers thy transcendent beauties. Guilt on the contrary, like a base thief, suspects every eye that beholds him to be privy to his transgressions, and every tongue that mentions his name, to be proclaiming them. Fraud and falsehood are his weak and treacherous allies; and he lurks trembling in the dark, dreading every ray of light, lest it should discover him, and give him up to shame and punishment.

While Booth was walking in the Park with all these horrors in his mind, he again met his friend Colonel James, who soon took notice of that deep concern which the other was incapable of hiding. After some little conversation, Booth said, ‘ my dear colonel, I am sure I must be the most insensible of men, if I did not look on you as the best and the truest friend; I will, therefore, without scruple, repose a confidence in you of the highest kind. I have often made you privy to my necessities, I will now acquaint you with my shame, provided you have leisure enough to give me a hearing: for I must open to you a long history, since I will not reveal my fault, without informing you, at the same time, of those circumstances, which, I hope, will in some measure excuse it.’

The colonel very readily agreed to give his friend a patient hearing. So they walked directly to a coffee-house at the corner of Spring-Garden, where, being in a room by themselves, Booth opened his whole heart, and acquainted the colonel with his

amour with Miss Matthews from the very beginning, to his receiving that letter which had caused all his present uneasiness, and which he now delivered into his friend's hand.

The colonel read the letter very attentively twice over : (he was silent indeed long enough to have read it oftener) and then turning to Booth, said, Well, sir ; ' and is it so grievous a calamity to be the object of ' a young lady's affection ; especially of one whom you ' allow to be so extremely handsome ? ' ' Nay, but my ' dear friend,' cries Booth, ' do not jest with me ; you ' who know my Amelia.' ' Well, my dear friend,' answered James, ' and you know Amelia, and this ' lady too—But what would you have me do for you ? ' ' I would have you give me your advice,' says Booth, ' by what method I shall get rid of this dreadful wo- ' man without a discovery.' ' And do you really,' cries the other, ' desire to get rid of her ? ' ' Can you ' doubt it,' saith Booth, ' after what I have com- ' municated to you, and after what you yourself have ' seen in my family ? for I hope, notwithstanding ' this fatal slip, I do not appear to you in the light ' of a profligate.' ' Well,' answered James, ' and ' whatever light I may appear to you in, if you are ' really tired of the lady, and if she be really what ' you have represented her, I'll endeavour to take her ' off your hands ; but I insist upon it, that you do ' not deceive me in any particular.' Booth protested in the most solemn manner, that every word which he had spoken was strictly true ; and being asked whether he would give his honour never more to visit the lady, he assured James that he never would. He then, at his friend's request, delivered him Miss Matthews's letter, in which was a second direction to her lodgings, and declared to him, that if he could bring him safely out of this terrible affair, he should think himself to have a still higher obligation to his friendship, than any which he had already received from it.

Booth pressed the colonel to go home with him to dinner ; but he excused himself, being, as he said, already engaged. However, he undertook in the af-
ternoon

ternoon to do all in his power, that Booth should receive no more alarms from the quarter of Miss Matthews, whom the colonel undertook to pay all the demands she had on his friend. They then separated. The colonel went to dinner at the King's-Arms, and Booth returned in high spirits to meet his Amelia.

The next day early in the morning, the colonel came to the coffee-house, and sent for his friend, who lodged but at a little distance. The colonel told him he had a little exaggerated the lady's beauty; however, he said, he excused that; 'for you might think perhaps,' cries he, 'that your inconstancy to the finest woman in the world, might want some excuse. Be that as it will,' said he, 'you may make yourself easy, as it will be, I am convinced, your own fault, if you have ever any further molestation from Miss Matthews.'

Booth poured forth very warmly a great profusion of gratitude on this occasion; and nothing more anywise material past at this interview, which was very short, the colonel being in a great hurry, as he had, he said, some business of very great importance to transact that morning.

The colonel had now seen Booth twice, without remembering to give him the thirty pounds. This the latter imputed intirely to forgetfulness; for he had always found the promises of the former to be equal in value with the notes or bonds of other people. He was more surpris'd at what happened the next day, when meeting his friend in the Park, he received only a cold salute from him; and though he past him five or six times, and the colonel was walking with a single officer of no great rank, and with whom he seem'd in no earnest conversation; yet could not Booth, who was alone, obtain any further notice from him.

This gave the poor man some alarm; though he could scarce persuade himself there was any design in all this coldness or forgetfulness. Once he imagin'd that he had lessened himself in the colonel's opinion, by having discovered his inconstancy to Amelia; but the known character of the other, presently

cured him of this suspicion, for he was a perfect libertine with regard to women; that being indeed the principal blemish in his character, which otherwise might have deserved much commendation for good-nature, generosity, and friendship. But he carried this one to a most unpardonable height; and made no scruple of openly declaring, that if he ever liked a woman well enough to be uneasy on her account, he would cure himself, if he could, by enjoying her, whatever might be the consequence.

Booth could not therefore be persuaded that the colonel would so highly resent in another a fault, of which he was himself most notoriously guilty. After much consideration, he could derive this behaviour from nothing better than a capriciousness in his friend's temper, from a kind of inconstancy of mind, which makes men grow weary of their friends, with no more reason than they often are of their mistresses. To say the truth, there are jilts in friendship as well as in love; and by the behaviour of some men in both, one would almost imagine that they industriously sought to gain the affections of others, with a view only of making the parties miserable.

This was the consequence of the colonel's behaviour to Booth. Former calamities had afflicted him; but this almost distracted him; and the more so, as he was not able well to account for such conduct, nor to conceive the reason of it.

Amelia, at his return, presently perceived the disturbance in his mind, though he endeavoured with his utmost power to hide it; and he was at length prevailed upon by her entreaties to discover to her the cause of it; which she no sooner heard, than she applied as judicious a remedy to his disordered spirits, as either of those great mental physicians, Tully, or Aristotle, could have thought of. She used many arguments to persuade him that he was in an error; and had mistaken forgetfulness and carelessness for a designed neglect.

But as this physic was only eventually good, and as its efficacy depended on her being in the right, a point in which she was not apt to be too positive, she
thought

thought fit to add some consolation of a more certain and positive kind. 'Admit,' said she, 'my dear, that Mr. James should prove the unaccountable person you have suspected, and should, without being able to alledge any cause, withdraw his friendship from you, (for surely the accident of burning his letter is too trifling and ridiculous to mention) why should this grieve you? the obligations he hath conferred on you, I allow, ought to make his misfortunes almost your own; but they should not, I think, make you see his faults so very sensibly, especially when, by one of the greatest faults in the world committed against yourself, he hath considerably lessened all obligations: for sure, if the same person who hath contributed to my happiness at one time, doth every thing in his power maliciously and wantonly to make me miserable at another, I am very little obliged to such a person. And let it be a comfort to my dear Billy, that however other friends may prove false and fickle to him, he hath one friend, whom no inconstancy of her own, nor any change of his fortune, nor time, nor age, nor sickness, nor any accident can ever alter; but who will esteem, will love, and doat on him for ever.' So saying, she flung her snowy arms about his neck, and gave him a caress so tender, that it seemed almost to balance all the malice of his fate.

And, indeed, the behaviour of Amelia would have made him completely happy, in defiance of all adverse circumstances, had it not been for those bitter ingredients which he himself had thrown into his cup; and which prevented him from truly relishing his Amelia's sweetness, by cruelly reminding him how unworthy he was of this excellent creature.

Booth did not long remain in the dark as to the conduct of James, which, at first, appeared to him to be so great a mystery; for this very afternoon he received a letter from Miss Matthews, which unravelled the whole affair. By this letter, which was full of bitterness and upbraiding, he discovered that James was his rival with that lady, and was indeed, the identical person who had sent the hundred pound note to
Miss

Miss Matthews, when in the prison. He had reason to believe likewise, as well by the letter as by other circumstances, that James had hitherto been an unsuccessful lover: for the lady, though she had forfeited all title to virtue, had not yet so far forfeited all pretensions to delicacy, as to be, like the dirt in the street, indifferently common to all. She distributed her favours only to those she liked, in which number that gentleman had not the happiness of being included.

When Booth had made this discovery, he was not so little versed in human nature, as any longer to hesitate at the true motive to the colonel's conduct; for he well knew how odious a sight a happy rival is to an unfortunate lover. I believe he was, in reality, glad to assign the cold treatment he had received from his friend, to a cause which, however unjustifiable, is, at the same time, highly natural; and to acquit him of a levity, fickleness, and caprice, which he must have been unwillingly obliged to have seen in a much worse light.

He now resolved to take the first opportunity of accosting the colonel, and of coming to a perfect explanation upon the whole matter. He debated likewise with himself, whether he should not throw himself at Amelia's feet, and confess a crime to her, which he found so little hopes of concealing, and which he foresaw would occasion him so many difficulties and terrors to endeavour to conceal. Happy had it been for him, had he wisely pursued this step; since, in all probability, he would have received immediate forgiveness from the best of women; but he had not sufficient resolution; or, to speak, perhaps, more truly, he had too much pride to confess his guilt, and preferred the danger of the highest inconveniences to the certainty of being put to the blush.

C H A P. VI.

In which may appear that violence is sometimes done to the name of love.

WHEN that happy day came, in which unhallowed hands are forbidden to contaminate the shoulders of the unfortunate, Booth went early to the

the colonel's house, and being admitted to his presence, began with great freedom, though with great gentleness, to complain of his not having dealt with him with more openness. 'Why, my dear colonel,' said he, 'would you not acquaint me with that secret which this letter hath disclosed?' James read the letter, at which his countenance changed more than once; and then, after a short silence, said, 'Mr. Booth, I have been to blame, I own it; and you upbraid me with justice. The true reason was, that I was ashamed of my own folly. D—n me, Booth, if I have not been a most consummate fool, a very dupe to this woman; and she hath a particular pleasure in making me so. I know what the impertinence of virtue is, and I can submit to it; but to be treated thus by a whore.—You must forgive me, dear Booth; but your success was a kind of triumph over me which I could not bear. I own, I have not the least reason to conceive any anger against you; and yet, curse me, if I should not have been less displeased at your lying with my own wife; nay, I could almost have parted with half my fortune to you more willingly, than have suffered you to receive that trifle of my money, which you received at her hands. However, I ask your pardon, and I promise you, I will never more think of you with the least ill-will, on the account of this woman; but as for her, d—n me, if I do not enjoy her by some means or other, whatever it costs me; for I am already above two hundred pound out of pocket, without having scarce had a smile in return.'

Booth expressed much astonishment at this declaration; he said, 'he could not conceive how it was possible to have such an affection for a woman, who did not shew the least inclination to return it.'—James gave her a hearty curse; and said, 'Pox of her inclination; I want only the possession of her person; and that you will allow is a very fine one. But, besides my passion for her, she hath now piqued my pride; for how can a man of my fortune brook being refused by a whore?' 'since you are so set on the business,' cries Booth, 'you will excuse my say-
ing

ing so, I fancy you had better change your method of applying to her: for, as she is, perhaps, the vainest woman upon earth, your bounty may probably do you little service; nay, may rather actually disoblige her. Vanity is plainly her predominant passion, and, if you will administer to that, it will infallibly throw her into your arms. To this I attribute my own unfortunate success. While she relieved my wants and distresses, she was daily feeding her own vanity; whereas, as every gift of yours asserted your superiority, it rather offended than pleased her. Indeed women generally love to be of the obliging side; and if we examine their favourites, we shall find them to be much oftner such as they have conferred obligations on, than such as they have received them from.'

There was something in this speech which pleased the colonel; and he said with a smile, 'I don't know how it is, Will; but you know women better than I.' 'Perhaps, colonel,' answered Booth, 'I have studied their minds more.' 'I don't however much envy you your knowledge,' replied the other: 'for I never think their minds worth considering. However, I hope I shall profit a little by your experience with Miss Matthews. Damnation seize the proud insolent harlot! the devil take me, if I don't love her more than I ever loved a woman!'

The rest of their conversation turned on Booth's affairs. The colonel again reassumed the part of a friend, gave him the remainder of the money, and promised to take the first opportunity of laying his memorial before a great man.

Booth was greatly overjoyed at this success. Nothing now lay on his mind, but to conceal his frailty from Amelia, to whom he was afraid Miss Matthews, in the rage of her resentment, would communicate it. This apprehension made him stay almost constantly at home; and he trembled at every knock at the door. His fear moreover betrayed him into a meanness, which he would have heartily despised on any other occasion. This was to order the maid to deliver him any letter directed to Amelia, at the same time strictly charg-

charging her not to acquaint her mistress with her having received any such orders.

A servant of any acuteness would have formed strange conjectures from such an injunction ; but this poor girl was of perfect simplicity ; so great indeed was her simplicity, that had not Amelia been void of all suspicion of her husband, the maid would have soon after betrayed her master.

One afternoon while they were drinking tea, little Betty, so was the maid called, came into the room ; and calling her master forth, delivered him a card which was directed to Amelia. Booth having read the card, on his return into the room, chid the girl for calling him, saying, if you can read, child, you must see it was directed to your mistress.—To this the girl answered pertly enough. I am sure, sir, you ordered me to bring every letter first to you. This hint, with many women, would have been sufficient to have blown up the whole affair ; but Amelia, who heard what the girl said, through the medium of love and confidence, saw the matter in a much better light than it deserved ; and looking tenderly on her husband, said, ‘ Indeed, my love, I must blame you for a conduct, which, perhaps, I ought rather to praise, as it proceeds only from the extreme tenderness of your affection. But, why will you endeavour to keep any secrets from me ? believe me, for my own sake you ought not : for as you cannot hide the consequences, you make me always suspect ten times worse than the reality. While I have you and my children well before my eyes, I am capable of facing any news which can arrive : for what ill news can come (unless indeed it concerns my little babe in the country) which doth not relate to the badness of our circumstances ? and those, I thank Heaven, we have now a fair prospect of retrieving. Besides, dear Billy, though my understanding be much inferior to yours, I have sometimes had the happiness of luckily hitting on some argument which hath afforded you comfort. This you know, my dear, was the case with regard to Colonel James, whom I persuaded you to think you had mistaken, and you see the event proved me in the right.’

So

So happily, both for herself and Mr. Booth, did the excellence of this good woman's disposition deceive her, and force her to see every thing in the most advantageous light to her husband.

The card being now inspected, was found to contain the compliments of Mrs. James to Mrs. Booth, with an account of her being arrived in town, and having brought with her a very great cold. Amelia was overjoyed at the news of her arrival; and having dressed herself in the utmost hurry, left her children to the care of her husband, and ran away to pay her respects to her friend, whom she loved with a most sincere affection. But how was she disappointed, when, eager with the utmost impatience, and exulting with the thoughts of presently seeing her beloved friend, she was answered at the door that the lady was not at home! nor could she upon telling her name, obtain any admission. This, considering the account she had received of the lady's cold, greatly surprised her; and she returned home very much vexed at her disappointment.

Amelia, who had no suspicion that Mrs. James was really at home, and, as the phrase is, was denied, would have made a second visit the next morning, had she not been prevented by a cold, which she herself now got, and which was attended with a slight fever. This confined her several days to her house, during which Booth officiated as her nurse, and never stirred from her.

In all this time she heard not a word from Mrs. James, which gave her some uneasiness, but more astonishment. The tenth day, when she was perfectly recovered, about nine in the evening, when she and her husband were just going to supper, she heard a most violent thundering at the door, and presently after a rustling of silk upon her stair-case; at the same time a female voice cried out pretty loud—'Bless me! what am I to climb up another pair of stairs?' upon which, Amelia, who well knew the voice, presently ran to the door, and ushered in Mrs. James most splendidly dressed; who put on as formal a countenance, and made as formal a courtesy to her old friend, as if she had been her very distant acquaintance.

Poor

Poor Amelia, who was going to rush into her friend's arms, was struck motionless by this behaviour; but recollecting her spirits, as she had an excellent presence of mind, she presently understood what the lady meant, and resolved to treat her in her own way. Down therefore the company sat, and silence prevailed for some time, during which Mrs. James surveyed the room with more attention than she would have bestowed on one much finer. At length the conversation began, in which the weather and the diversions of the town, were well canvassed. Amelia, who was a woman of great humour, performed her part to admiration; so that a by-stander would have doubted, in every other article than dress, which of the two was the most accomplished fine lady.

After a visit of twenty minutes, during which, not a word of any former occurrences was mentioned, nor indeed any subject of discourse started, except only those two above-mentioned, Mrs. James rose from her chair, and retired in the same formal manner in which she had approached. We will pursue her, for the sake of the contrast, during the rest of the evening. She went from Amelia directly to a rout, where she spent two hours in a croud of company, talked again and again over the diversions and news of the town, played two rubbers at whist, and then retired to her own apartment, where, having past another hour in undressing herself, she went to her own bed.

Booth and his wife, the moment their companion was gone, sat down to supper on a piece of cold meat, the remains of their dinner. After which, over a pint of wine, they entertained themselves for a while with the ridiculous behaviour of their visitant. But Amelia declaring she rather saw her as the object of pity than anger, turned the discourse to pleasanter topics. The little actions of their children, the former scenes, and future prospects of their life, furnished them with many pleasant ideas, and the contemplation of Amelia's recovery threw Booth into raptures. At length they retired, happy in each other.

It is possible some readers may be no less surprised at the behaviour of Mrs. James, than was Amelia her-

herself, since they may have perhaps received so favourable an impression of that lady from the account given of her by Mr. Booth, that her present demeanour may seem unnatural and inconsistent with her former character. But they will be pleased to consider the great alteration in her circumstances, from a state of dependency on a brother, who was himself no better than a soldier of fortune, to that of being wife to a man of a very large estate, and considerable rank in life. And what was her present behaviour more than that of a fine lady, who considered form and show as essential ingredients of human happiness, and imagined all friendship to consist in ceremony, courtesies, messages, and visits? in which opinion she hath the honour to think with much the larger part of one sex, and no small number of the other.

C H A P. VII.

Containing a very extraordinary and pleasant incident.

THE next evening Booth and Amelia went to walk in the Park with their children. They were now on the verge of the Parade, and Booth was describing to his wife the several buildings round it; when, on a sudden, Amelia missing her little boy, cried out, where's little Billy; upon which, Booth casting his eyes over the grass, saw a foot-soldier shaking the boy at a little distance. At this sight, without making any answer to his wife, he leapt over the rails; and running directly up to the fellow, who had a fire-lock with a bayonet fixed in his hand, he seized him by the collar, and tript up his heels, and at the same time wrested his arms from him. A serjeant upon duty seeing the affray at some distance, ran presently up, and being told what had happened, gave the sentinel a hearty curse, and told him he deserved to be hanged. A by-stander gave this information; for Booth was returned with his little boy to meet Amelia, who staggered towards him as fast as she could, all pale and breathless, and scarce able to support her tottering limbs. The serjeant now came up to Booth, to make an apology for the behaviour of the soldier, when

when of a sudden he turned almost as pale as Amelia herself. He stood silent whilst Booth was employed in comforting and recovering his wife; and then addressing himself to him, said, ‘bless me! lieutenant, could I imagine it had been your honour; and was it my little master that the rascal used so—I am glad I did not know it, for I should certainly have run my halbert into him.’

Booth presently recognized his old faithful servant Atkinson, and gave him a hearty greeting; saying, he was very glad to see him in his present situation. ‘Whatever I am,’ answered the serjeant, ‘I shall always think I owe it to your honour.’ Then taking the little boy by the hand—he cried, ‘what a vast fine young gentleman master is grown!’ and cursing the soldier’s inhumanity, swore heartily he would make him pay for it.

As Amelia was much disordered with her fright, she did not recollect her foster-brother, till he was introduced to her by Booth; but she no sooner knew him, than she bestowed a most obliging smile on him; and calling him by the name of honest Joe, said she was heartily glad to see him in England.—‘See, my dear,’ cries Booth, ‘what preferment your old friend is come to. You would scarce know him, I believe, in his present state of finery.’ ‘I am very well pleased to see it,’ answered Amelia, ‘and I wish him joy of being made an officer, with all my heart.’ In fact, from what Mr. Booth said, joined to the serjeant’s laced coat, she believed that he had obtained a commission. So weak and absurd is human vanity, that this mistake of Amelia’s possibly put poor Atkinson out of countenance; for he looked at this instant more silly than he had ever done in his life; and making her a most respectful bow, muttered something about obligations, in a scarce articulate or intelligible manner.

The serjeant had, indeed, among many other qualities, that modesty which a Latin author honours by the name of ingenuous: nature had given him this, notwithstanding the meanness of his birth; and six years conversation in the army, had not taken it away. To say the truth, he was a noble fellow; and Amelia, by
sup-

supposing he had a commission in the guards, had been guilty of no affront to that honourable body.

Booth had a real affection for Atkinson, though in fact he knew not half his merit. He acquainted him with his lodgings, where he earnestly desired to see him.

Amelia, who was far from being recovered from the terrors into which the seeing her husband engaged with the soldier had thrown her, desired to go home; nor was she well able to walk without some assistance. While she supported herself therefore on her husband's arm, she told Atkinson, she should be obliged to him, if he would take care of the children. He readily accepted the office; but, upon offering his hand to Miss, she refused, and burst into tears. Upon which, the tender mother resigned Booth to her children, and put herself under the serjeant's protection; who conducted her safe home, though she often declared she feared she should drop down by the way. The fear of which so affected the serjeant, (for besides the honour which he himself had for the lady, he knew how tenderly his friend loved her) that he was unable to speak; and had not his nerves been so strongly braced that nothing could shake them he had enough in his mind to have set him a trembling equally with the lady.

When they arrived at the lodgings, the mistress of the house opened the door, who, seeing Amelia's condition, threw open the parlour, and begged her to walk in; upon which she immediately flung herself into a chair; and all present thought she would have fainted away—However she escaped that misery, and having drank a glass of water with a little white wine mixed in it, she began, in a little time, to regain her complexion; and at length assured Booth that she was perfectly recovered; but declared she had never undergone so much, and earnestly begged him never to be so rash for the future. She then called her little boy, and gently chid him; saying, 'you must never do so more, Billy; you see what mischief you might have brought upon your father; and what you have made me suffer.' 'La! mamma,' said the child, 'what harm did I do? I did not know that people might
' not

‘ not walk in the green fields in London. I am sure
‘ if I did a fault, the man punished me enough for
‘ it; for he pinched me almost through my slender
‘ arm.’ He then bared his little arm, which was
greatly discoloured by the injury it had received—
Booth uttered a most dreadful execration at this sight;
and the serjeant, who was now present, did the like.

Atkinson now returned to his guard, and went directly to the officer to acquaint him with the soldier’s inhumanity; but he, who was about fifteen years of age, gave the serjeant a great curse, and said the soldier had done very well; for that idle boys ought to be corrected. This however did not satisfy poor Atkinson, who the next day, as soon as the guard was relieved, beat the fellow most unmercifully, and told him he would remember him as long as he stayed in the regiment.

Thus ended this trifling adventure, which some readers will, perhaps, be pleased with seeing related at full length. None, I think, can fail drawing one observation from it; namely, how capable the most insignificant accident is of disturbing human happiness, and of producing the most unexpected and dreadful events. A reflection which may serve to many moral and religious uses.

This accident produced the first acquaintance between the mistress of the house, and her lodgers; for hitherto they had scarce exchanged a word together. But the great concern which the good woman had shewn on Amelia’s account at this time, was not likely to pass unobserved, or unthanked either by the husband or wife. Amelia therefore, as soon as she was able to go up stairs, invited Mrs. Ellison (for that was her name) to her apartment, and desired the favour of her to stay to supper. She readily complied; and they past a very agreeable evening together, in which the two women seemed to have conceived a most extraordinary liking to each other.

Though beauty in general doth not greatly recommend one woman to another, as it is too apt to create envy; yet, in cases where this passion doth not interfere, a fine woman is often a pleasing object even to
some

some of her own sex ; especially when her beauty is attended with a certain air of affability, as was that of Amelia in the highest degree. She was, indeed, a most charming woman ; and I know not whether the little scar on her nose did not rather add to, than diminish her beauty.

Mrs. Ellison therefore was as much charmed with the loveliness of her fair lodger, as with all her other engaging qualities. She was, indeed, so taken with Amelia's beauty, that she could not refrain from crying out in a kind of transport of admiration, ' upon my word, Captain Booth, you are the happiest man in the world. Your lady is so extremely handsome, that one cannot look at her without pleasure.'

This good woman herself had none of these attractive charms to the eye. Her person was short, and immoderately fat ; her features were none of the most regular ; and her complexion (if indeed she ever had a good one) had considerably suffered by time.

Her good humour and complaisance, however, were highly pleasing to Amelia. Nay, why should we conceal the secret satisfaction which that lady felt from the compliments paid to her person ? since such of my readers as like her best will not be sorry to find that she was a woman.

C H A P. VIII.

Containing various matters.

A Fortnight had now past, since Booth had seen or heard from the colonel ; which did not a little surprise him, as they had parted so good friends, and as he had so cordially undertaken his cause concerning the memorial, on which all his hopes depended.

The uneasiness which this gave him, farther increased on finding that his friend refused to see him : for he had paid the colonel a visit at nine in the morning, and was told he was not stirring ; and at his return back an hour afterwards, the servant said his master was gone out ; of which Booth was certain of the falsehood : for he had, during that whole hour, walked
back-

backwards and forwards within sight of the colonel's door, and must have seen him, if he had gone out within that time.

The good colonel however did not long suffer his friend to continue in the deplorable state of anxiety; for the very next morning Booth received his memorial inclosed in a letter, acquainting him that Mr. James had mentioned his affair to the person he proposed; but that the great man had so many engagements on his hands, that it was impossible for him to make any further promises at this time.

The cold and distant stile of this letter, and indeed the whole behaviour of James, so different from what it had been formerly, had something so mysterious in it, that it greatly puzzled and perplexed poor Booth; and it was so long before he was able to solve it, that the reader's curiosity will, perhaps, be obliged to us for not leaving him so long in the dark as to this matter. The true reason then of the colonel's conduct was this: his unbounded generosity, together with the unbounded extravagance, and consequently the great necessity of Miss Matthews, had at length overcome the cruelty of that lady, with whom he likewise had luckily no rival. Above all, the desire of being revenged on Booth, with whom she was, to the highest degree enraged, had perhaps contributed not a little to his success: for she had no sooner condescended to a familiarity with her new lover, and discovered that Captain James, of whom she had heard so much from Booth, was no other than the identical colonel, than she employed every art of which she was mistress, to make an utter breach of friendship between these two. For this purpose she did not scruple to insinuate, that the colonel was not at all obliged to the character given of him by his friend; and to the account of this latter she placed most of the cruelty which she had shewn to the former.

Had the colonel made a proper use of his reason, and fairly examined the probability of the fact, he could scarce have been imposed upon to believe a matter so inconsistent with all he knew of Booth, and in which that gentleman must have sinned against all the

laws of honour without any visible temptation. But in solemn fact, the colonel was so intoxicated with his love, that it was in the power of his mistress to have persuaded him of any thing; besides, he had an interest in giving her credit: for he was not a little pleased with finding a reason for hating the man, whom he could not help hating without any reason, at least, without any which he durst fairly assign even to himself. Henceforth therefore he abandoned all friendship for Booth, and was more inclined to put him out of the world, than to endeavour any longer at supporting him in it.

Booth communicated this letter to his wife, who endeavoured, as usual, to the utmost of her power, to console him under one of the greatest afflictions, which, I think, can befall a man, namely, the unkindness of a friend; but he had luckily at the same time the greatest blessing in his possession, the kindness of a faithful and beloved wife. A blessing however, which, though it compensates most of the evils of life, rather serves to aggravate the misfortune of distressed circumstances, from the consideration of the share which she is to bear in them.

This afternoon Amelia received a second visit from Mrs. Ellifon, who acquainted her that she had a present of a ticket for the oratorio, which would carry two persons into the gallery; and therefore begged the favour of her company thither.

Amelia with many thanks acknowledged the civility of Mrs. Ellifon; but declined accepting her offer; upon which, Booth very strenuously insisted on her going, and said to her, ‘my dear, if you knew the satisfaction I have in any of your pleasures, I am convinced you would not refuse the favour Mrs. Ellifon is so kind to offer you; for as you are a lover of music, you, who have never been at an oratorio, cannot conceive how you will be delighted.’ ‘I well know your goodness, my dear,’ answered Amelia, ‘but I cannot think of leaving my children without some person more proper to take care of them than this poor girl.’ Mrs. Ellifon removed this objection, by offering her own servant, a very discreet matron,

tron, to attend them ; but notwithstanding this, and all she could say, with the assistance of Booth, and of the children themselves, Amelia still persisted in her refusal ; and the mistress of the house, who knew how far good breeding allows persons to be pressing on these occasions, took her leave :

She was no sooner departed, than Amelia, looking tenderly on her husband, said, ‘ how can you, my dear creature, think that music hath any charms for me at this time—Or indeed do you believe that I am capable of any sensation worthy the name of pleasure, when neither you nor my children are present, or bear any part of it ?’

An officer of the regiment to which Booth had formerly belonged, hearing from Atkinson where he lodged, now came to pay him a visit. He told him that several of their old acquaintance were to meet the next Wednesday at a tavern, and very strongly pressed him to be one of the company. Booth was, in truth, what is called a hearty fellow, and loved now and then to take a chearful glass with his friends ; but he excused himself at this time. His friend declared he would take no denial, and he growing very importunate, Amelia at length seconded him. Upon this Booth answered, ‘ well, my dear, since you desire me, I will comply, but on one condition, that you go at the same time to the oratorio.’ Amelia thought this request reasonable enough, and gave her consent ; of which Mrs. Ellison presently received the news, and with great satisfaction.

It may, perhaps, be asked why Booth could go to the tavern and not to the oratorio with his wife. In truth then, the tavern was within hallowed ground, that is to say, in the verge of the court : for of five officers that were to meet there, three, besides Booth, were confined to that air, which hath been always found extremely wholesome to a broken military constitution. And here, if the good reader will pardon the pun, he will scarce be offended at the observation ; since, how is it possible that, without running in debt, any persons should maintain the dress and appearance of a gentleman, whose income is not half so good as

that of a porter? it is true, that this allowance, small as it is, is a great expence to the public; but if several more unnecessary charges were spared, the public might, perhaps, bear a little encrease of this without much feeling it. They would not, I am sure, have equal reason to complain at contributing to the maintenance of a set of brave fellows, who, at the hazard of their health, their limbs, and their lives, have maintained the safety and honour of their country; as when they find themselves taxed to the support of a set of drones, who have not the least merit or claim to their favour; and who, without contributing in any manner to the good of the hive, live luxuriously on the labours of the industrious bee.

C H A P. IX.

In which Amelia, with her friend, goes to the Oratorio.

NOTHING happened between the Monday and the Wednesday worthy a place in this history. Upon the evening of the latter, the two ladies went to the oratorio, and were there time enough to get a first row in the gallery. Indeed there was only one person in the house when they came: for Amelia's inclinations, when she gave a loose to them, were pretty eager for this diversion, she being a great lover of music, and particularly of Mr. Handel's compositions. Mrs. Ellison was, I suppose, a great lover likewise of music, for she was the more impatient of the two; which was rather the more extraordinary, as these entertainments were not such novelties to her as they were to poor Amelia.

Though our ladies arrived full two hours before they saw the back of Mr. Handel; yet this time of expectation did not hang extremely heavy on their hands; for besides their own chat, they had the company of a gentleman, whom they found at their first arrival in the gallery; and who, though plainly, or rather roughly dressed, very luckily for the women happened to be not only well-bred, but a person of very lively conversation. The gentleman on his part seemed highly charmed with Amelia, and in fact was so: for,

for, though he restrained himself entirely within the rules of good-breeding, yet was he in the highest degree officious to catch at every opportunity of shewing his respect, and doing her little services. He procured her a book and wax-candle, and held the candle for her himself during the whole entertainment.

At the end of the oratorio, he declared he would not leave the ladies till he had seen them safe into their chairs or coach; and at the same time very earnestly entreated that he might have the honour of waiting on them. Upon which Mrs. Ellison, who was a very good-humoured woman, answered, ‘ Ay sure, sir, if you please; you have been very obliging to us; and a dish of tea shall be at your service at any time; and then told him where she lived.’

The ladies were no sooner seated in their hackney-coach, than Mrs. Ellison burst into a loud laughter, and cried, ‘ I’ll be hanged, madam, if you have not made a conquest to-night; and what is very pleasant, I believe the poor gentleman takes you for a single lady.’ ‘ Nay,’ answered Amelia very gravely, ‘ I protest I began to think at last he was rather too particular, though he did not venture at a word that I could be offended at; but if you fancy any such thing, I am sorry you invited him to drink tea.’ ‘ Why so?’ replied Mrs. Ellison, ‘ Are you angry with a man for liking you? if you are, you will be angry with almost every man that sees you. If I was a man myself, I declare I should be in the number of your admirers. Poor gentleman, I pity him heartily; he little knows that you have not a heart to dispose of. For my own part, I should not be surprized at seeing a serious proposal of marriage: for I am convinced he is a man of fortune, not only by the politeness of his address, but by the fineness of his linen, and that valuable diamond-ring on his finger. But you will see more of him when he comes to tea.’ ‘ Indeed I shall not,’ answered Amelia, ‘ though I believe you only rally me; I hope you have a better opinion of me, than to think I would go willingly into the company of a man, who had an improper liking for me.’ Mrs. Ellison, who was

one of the gayest women in the world, repeated the words, improper liking, with a laugh; and cried, 'My dear Mrs. Booth, believe me, you are too handsome and too good-humoured for a prude. How can you affect being offended at what I am convinced is the greatest pleasure of womankind, and chiefly I believe of us virtuous women? for, I assure you, notwithstanding my gaiety, I am as virtuous as any prude in Europe.' 'Far be it from me, madam,' said Amelia, 'to suspect the contrary of abundance of women, who indulge themselves in much greater freedoms than I should take, or have any pleasure in taking: for I solemnly protest, if I know my own heart, the liking of all men, but of one, is a matter quite indifferent to me, or rather would be highly disagreeable.'

This discourse brought them home, where Amelia finding her children asleep, and her husband not returned, invited her companion to partake of her homely fare, and down they sat to supper together. The clock struck twelve; and no news being arrived of Booth, Mrs. Ellifon began to express some astonishment at his stay, whence she launched into a general reflection on husbands, and soon past to some particular invectives on her own. 'Ah, my dear madam,' says she, 'I know the present state of your mind by what I have myself often felt formerly. I am no stranger to the melancholy tone of a midnight clock. It was my misfortune to drag on a heavy chain above fifteen years, with a fottish yoke-fellow. But how can I wonder at my fate; since I see even your superior charms cannot confine a husband from the bewitching pleasures of a bottle.' 'Indeed, madam,' says Amelia, 'I have no reason to complain, Mr. Booth is one of the soberest of men; but now and then to spend a late hour with his friend, is, I think, highly excusable.' 'O, no doubt,' cries Mrs. Ellifon, 'if he can excuse himself; but if I was a man'—Here Booth came in and interrupted the discourse. Amelia's eyes flashed with joy the moment he appeared; and he discovered no less pleasure in seeing her. His spirits were indeed a little elevated with wine, so as to heighten

heighten his good-humour, without in the least disordering his understanding, and made him such delightful company, that though it was past one in the morning, neither his wife, nor Mrs. Ellifon, thought of their beds during a whole hour.

Early the next morning the serjeant came to Mr. Booth's lodgings, and with a melancholy countenance acquainted him, that he had been the night before at an ale-house, where he heard one Mr. Murphy an attorney declare, that he would get a warrant backed against one Captain Booth at the next board of green-cloth. 'I hope, sir,' said he, 'your honour will pardon me; but by what he said, I was afraid he meant your honour; and therefore I thought it my duty to tell you; for I knew the same thing happen to a gentleman here the other day.'

Booth gave Mr. Atkinson many thanks for his information. 'I doubt not,' said he, 'but I am the person meant; for it would be foolish in me to deny that I am liable to apprehensions of that sort.' 'I hope, sir,' said the serjeant, 'your honour will soon have reason to fear no man living; but in the mean time, if any accident should happen, my bail is at your service as far as it will go; and I am a house-keeper, and can swear myself worth one hundred pound.' Which hearty and friendly declaration received all those acknowledgements from Booth, which it really deserved.

The poor gentleman was greatly alarmed at this news; but he was altogether as much surprized at Murphy's being the attorney employed against him, as all his debts, except only to Captain James, arose in the country, where he did not know that Mr. Murphy had any acquaintance. However, he made no doubt that he was the person intended, and resolved to remain a close prisoner in his own lodgings, till he saw the event of a proposal which had been made him the evening before at the tavern, where an honest gentleman, who had a post under the government, and who was one of the company, had promised to serve him with the secretary at war, telling him, that he made no doubt of procuring him whole pay in a regiment abroad,

abroad, which in his present circumstances was very highly worth his acceptance; when indeed that, and a gaol, seemed to be the only alternatives that offered themselves to his choice.

Mr. Booth and his lady spent that afternoon with Mrs. Ellifon. An incident which we should scarce have mentioned, had it not been that Amelia gave, on this occasion, an instance of that prudence which should never be off its guard in married women of delicacy: for before she would consent to drink tea with Mrs. Ellifon, she made conditions, that the gentleman who had met them at the oratorio should not be let in. Indeed this circumspection proved unnecessary in the present instance; for no such visitor ever came; a circumstance which gave great content to Amelia: for that lady had been a little uneasy at the raillery of Mrs. Ellifon, and had upon reflection magnified every little compliment made her, and every little civility shewn her by the unknown gentleman, far beyond the truth. These imaginations, now all subsided again; and she imputed all that Mrs. Ellifon had said, either to raillery or mistake.

A young lady made a fourth with them at whist, and likewise staid the whole evening. Her name was Bennet. She was about the age of five and twenty; but sickness had given her an older look, and had a good deal diminished her beauty; of which, young as she was, she plainly appeared to have only the remains in her present possession. She was in one particular the very reverse of Mrs. Ellifon, being altogether as remarkably grave as the other was gay. This gravity was not however attended with any sourness of temper: on the contrary, she had much sweetness in her countenance, and was perfectly well bred. In short, Amelia imputed her grave deportment to her ill health, and began to entertain a compassion for her, which in good minds, that is to say, in minds capable of compassion, is certain to introduce some little degree of love or friendship.

Amelia was in short so pleased with the conversation of this lady, that, though a woman of no impertinent curiosity, she could not help taking the first opportunity

portunity of enquiring who she was. Mrs. Ellifon said, that she was an unhappy lady, who had married a young clergyman for love, who, dying of a consumption, had left her a widow in very indifferent circumstances. This account made Amelia still pity her more, and consequently added to the liking which she had already conceived for her. Amelia therefore desired Mrs. Ellifon to bring her acquainted with Mistress Bennet, and said she would go any day with her to make that lady a visit. ‘There need be no ceremony,’ cried Mrs. Ellifon, ‘she is a woman of no form: and as I saw plainly she was extremely pleased with Mrs. Booth, I am convinced I can bring her to drink tea with you any afternoon you please.’

The two next days Booth continued at home, highly to the satisfaction of his Amelia, who really knew no happiness out of his company, nor scarce any misery in it. She had, indeed, at all times so much of his company when in his power, that she had no occasion to assign any particular reason for his staying with her, and consequently it could give her no cause of suspicion. The Saturday one of her children was a little disordered with a feverish complaint, which confined her to her room, and prevented her drinking tea in the afternoon with her husband in Mrs. Ellifon’s apartment, where a noble lord, a cousin of Mrs. Ellifon’s, happened to be present: for though that lady was reduced in her circumstances, and obliged to let out part of her house in lodgings, she was born of a good family, and had some considerable relations.

His lordship was not himself in any office of state; but his fortune gave him great authority with those who were. Mrs. Ellifon, therefore, very bluntly took an opportunity of recommending Booth to his consideration. She took the first hint from my lord’s calling the gentleman captain—To which she answered—‘Ay, I wish your lordship would make him so. It would be but an act of justice, and I know it is in your power to do much greater things.’ She then mentioned Booth’s services, and the wounds he

had received at the siege, of which she had heard a faithful account from Amelia—Booth blushed and was as silent as a young virgin at the hearing her own praises. His lordship answered, ‘ Cousin Ellifon, you know you may command my interest; nay, I shall have a pleasure in serving one of Mr. Booth’s character; for my part, I think merit in all capacities ought to be encouraged; but I know the ministry are greatly pestered with solicitations at this time. However, Mr. Booth may be assured I will take the first opportunity; and, in the mean time, I shall be glad of seeing him any morning he pleases.’ For all these declarations, Booth was not wanting in acknowledgments to the generous peer, any more than he was in secret gratitude to the lady, who had shewn so friendly and uncommon a zeal in his favour.

The reader, when he knows the character of this nobleman, may, perhaps, conclude that his seeing Booth alone was a lucky circumstance; for he was so passionate an admirer of women, that he could scarce have escaped the attraction of Amelia’s beauty. And few men, as I have observed, have such disinterested generosity as to serve a husband the better, because they are in love with his wife, unless she will condescend to pay a price beyond the reach of a virtuous woman.

A M E L I A.

A M E L I A.

B O O K V.

C H A P. I.

In which the reader will meet with an old acquaintance.

BOOOTH'S affairs were put on a better aspect than they had ever worn before, and he was willing to make use of the opportunity of one day in seven to taste the fresh air.

At nine in the morning he went to pay a visit to his old friend Colonel James, resolving, if possible, to have a full explanation of that behaviour which appeared to him so mysterious; but the colonel was as inaccessible as the best defended fortrefs; and it was as impossible for Booth to pass beyond his entry, as the Spaniards found it to take Gibraltar. He received the usual answers; first, that the colonel was not stirring, and an hour after that he was gone out. All that he got by asking further questions was only to receive still ruder and ruder answers; by which, if he had been very sagacious, he might have been satisfied how little worth his while it was to desire to go in: for the porter at a great man's door, is a kind of thermometer, by which you may discover the warmth or coldness of his master's friendship. Nay, in the highest stations of all, as the great man himself hath his different kinds of salutation, from an hearty embrace with a kiss, and my dear lord, or dear Sir Charles, down to, well Mr.---what would you have me do? so the porter, to some bows with respect, to others with a smile, to some he bows more, to others less low, to others not at all. Some he just lets in, and

others he just shuts out. And in all this they so well correspond, that one would be inclined to think that the great man and his porter had compared their lists together, and like two actors concerned to act different parts in the same scene, had rehearsed their parts privately together before they ventured to perform in public.

Though Booth did not, perhaps, see the whole matter in this just light, for that in reality it is; yet he was discerning enough to conclude from the behaviour of the servant, especially when he considered that of the master likewise, that he had entirely lost the friendship of James; and this conviction gave him a concern, that not only the flattering prospect of his lordship's favour was not able to compensate; but which, even obliterated, and made him for a while forget, the situation in which he had left his Amelia; and he wandered about almost two hours, scarce knowing where he went, till at last he dropt into a coffee-house near St. James's, where he sat himself down.

He had scarce drank his dish of coffee, before he heard a young officer of the guards cry to another, 'Od, d—m me Jack, here he comes—here's old honour and dignity, faith.' Upon which, he saw a chair open, and out issued a most erect and stately figure indeed, with a vast perriwig on his head, and a vast hat under his arm. This august personage, having entered the room, walked directly up to the upper end, where having paid his respects to all present of any note, to each according to seniority, he at last cast his eyes on Booth, and very civilly, though somewhat coldly, asked him how he did.

Booth, who had long recognized the features of his old acquaintance Major Bath, returned the compliment with a very low bow; but did not venture to make the first advance to familiarity, as he was truly possessed of that quality which the Greeks considered in the highest light of honour, and which we term modesty; though indeed, neither ours nor the Latin language hath any word adequate to the idea of the original.

The

The colonel, after having discharged himself of two or three articles of news, and made his comments upon them, when the next chair to him became vacant, called upon Booth to fill it. He then asked him several questions relating to his affairs; and, when he heard he was out of the army, advised him earnestly to use all means to get in again, saying, that he was a pretty lad, and they must not lose him.

Booth told him in a whisper, that he had a great deal to say to him on that subject, if they were in a more private place; upon this, the colonel proposed a walk in the Park, which the other readily accepted.

During their walk, Booth opened his heart, and among other matters acquainted Colonel Bath, that he feared he had lost the friendship of Colonel James; 'though I am not,' said he, 'conscious of having done the least thing to deserve it.'

Bath answered, 'You are certainly mistaken, Mr. Booth. I have indeed scarce seen my brother since my coming to town; for I have been here but two days; however, I am convinced he is a man of too nice honour to do any thing inconsistent with the true dignity of a gentleman.' Booth answered, 'he was far from accusing him of any thing dishonourable.'—'D—m me,' said Bath, 'if there is a man alive can, or dare accuse him: if you have the least reason to take any thing ill, why don't you go to him? you are a gentleman, and his rank doth not protect him from giving you satisfaction.' 'The affair is not of any such kind,' says Booth, 'I have great obligations to the colonel, and have more reason to lament than complain; and if I could but see him, I am convinced I should have no cause for either; but I cannot get within his house; it was but an hour ago, a servant of his turned me rudely from the door.' 'Did a servant of my brother use you rudely?' said the colonel with the utmost gravity. 'I do not know, sir, in what light you see such things; but to me, the affront of a servant is the affront of the master; and if he doth not immediately punish it, by all the dignity of a man, I would see the master's nose between my fingers.' Booth offered

ferred to explain, but to no purpose; the colonel was got into his stilts; and it was impossible to take him down, nay, it was as much as Booth could possibly do to part with him without an actual quarrel; nor would he, perhaps, have been able to have accomplished it, had not the colonel by accident turned at last to take Booth's side of the question; and before they separated, he swore many oaths that James should give him proper satisfaction.

Such was the end of this present interview, so little to the content of Booth, that he was heartily concerned he had ever mentioned a syllable of the matter to his honourable friend.

C H A P. II.

In which Booth pays a visit to the noble lord.

WHEN that day of the week returned, in which Mr. Booth chose to walk abroad, he went to wait on the noble peer according to his kind invitation.

Booth now found a very different reception with this great man's porter, from what he had met with at his friend the colonel's. He no sooner told his name, than the porter with a bow told him his lordship was at home; the door immediately flew wide open; and he was conducted to an antichamber, where a servant told him he would acquaint his lordship with his arrival. Nor did he wait many minutes before the same servant returned, and ushered him to his lordship's apartment.

He found my lord alone, and was received by him in the most courteous manner imaginable. After the first ceremonials were over his lordship began in the following words: 'Mr. Booth, I do assure you, you are very much obliged to my Cousin Ellison. She hath given you such a character, that I shall have a pleasure in doing any thing in my power to serve you.—But it will be very difficult, I am afraid, to get you a rank at home. In the West-Indies, perhaps, or in some regiment abroad, it may be more easy; and when I consider your reputation as
a soldier,

‘ a soldier, I make no doubt of your readiness to go
‘ to any place where the service of your country shall
‘ call you.’ Booth answered, ‘ that he was highly
‘ obliged to his lordship, and assured him, he would
‘ with great chearfulness attend his duty in any part
‘ of the world. The only thing grievous in the ex-
‘ change of countries,’ said he, ‘ in my opinion, is to
‘ leave those I love behind me, and I am sure, I shall
‘ never have a second trial equal to my first. It was
‘ very hard, my lord, to leave a young wife big with
‘ her first child, and so affected with my absence, that
‘ I had the utmost reason to despair of ever seeing
‘ her more. After such a demonstration of my reso-
‘ lution to sacrifice every other consideration to my
‘ duty, I hope your lordship will honour me with
‘ some confidence, that I shall make no objection to
‘ serve in any country.’ ‘ My dear Mr. Booth,’ an-
‘ swered the lord, ‘ you speak like a soldier, and I
‘ greatly honour your sentiments. Indeed, I own
‘ the justice of your inference from the example you
‘ have given : for, to quit a wife, as you say, in the
‘ very infancy of marriage, is, I acknowledge, some
‘ trial of resolution.’ Booth answered with a low
bow, and then after some immaterial conversation,
his lordship promised to speak immediately to the
minister, and appointed Mr. Booth to come to him
again on the Wednesday morning, that he might be
acquainted with his patron’s success. The poor man
now blushed and looked silly, till, after some time, he
summoned up all his courage to his assistance, and re-
lying on the other’s friendship, he opened the whole
affair of his circumstances, and confessed that he did
not dare to stir from his lodgings above one day in
seven. His lordship expressed great concern at this
account, and very kindly promised to take some oppor-
tunity of calling on him at his Cousin Ellifon’s, when
he hoped, he said, to bring him comfortable tidings.

Booth soon afterwards took his leave with the most
profuse acknowledgments for so much goodness, and
hastened home to acquaint his Amelia with what had
so greatly overjoyed him. She highly congratulated
him on his having found so generous and powerful a
friend,

friend, towards whom, both their bosoms burnt with the warmest sentiments of gratitude. She was not however contented, till she had made Booth renew his promise in the most solemn manner of taking her with him. After which, they sat down with their little children to a scrag of mutton and broth, with the highest satisfaction, and very heartily drank his lordship's health in a pot of porter,

In the afternoon this happy couple, if the reader will allow me to call poor people happy, drank tea with Mrs. Ellifon, where his lordship's praises being again repeated by both the husband and wife, were very loudly echoed by Mrs. Ellifon. While they were here, the young lady, whom we have mentioned at the end of the last book to have made a fourth at whist, and with whom Amelia seemed so much pleased, came in; she was just returned to town from a short visit in the country, and her present visit was unexpected. It was, however, very agreeable to Amelia, who liked her still better upon a second interview, and was resolved to solicit her further acquaintance.

Mrs. Bennet still maintained some little reserve, but was much more familiar and communicative than before. She appeared moreover to be as little ceremonious as Mrs. Ellifon had reported her, and very readily accepted Amelia's apology for not paying her the first visit, and agreed to drink tea with her the very next afternoon.

Whilst the above-mentioned company were sitting in Mrs. Ellifon's parlour, Serjeant Atkinson passed by the window, and knocked at the door. Mrs. Ellifon no sooner saw him, than she said, 'pray, Mr. Booth, who is that genteel young serjeant? he was here every day last week, to enquire after you.' This was indeed a fact; the serjeant was apprehensive of the design of Murphy; but as the poor fellow had received all his answers from the maid or Mrs. Ellifon, Booth had never heard a word of the matter. He was however greatly pleased with what he was now told, and burst forth into great praises of the serjeant, which were seconded by Amelia, who added, that he
was

was her foster-brother, and she believed one of the honestest fellows in the world.

‘And I’ll swear,’ cries Mrs. Ellifon, ‘he is one of the prettiest—Do, Mr. Booth, desire him to walk in. A serjeant of the guards is a gentleman; and I had rather give such a man as you describe a dish of tea, than any beau fribble of them all.’

Booth wanted no great sollicitation to shew any kind of regard to Atkinson; and accordingly, the serjeant was ushered in, though not without some reluctance on his side. There is, perhaps, nothing more uneasy than those sensations which the French call the *mauvaise honte*, nor any more difficult to conquer; and poor Atkinson would, I am persuaded, have mounted a breach with less concern, than he shewed in walking across a room before three ladies, two of whom were his avowed well wishers.

Though I do not entirely agree with the late learned Mr. Essex, the celebrated dancing master’s opinion, that dancing is the rudiment of polite education, as he would, I apprehend, exclude every other art and science; yet it is certain, that persons whose feet have never been under the hands of the professors of that art, are apt to discover this want in their education in every motion, nay, even when they stand or sit still. They seem, indeed, to be overburthened with limbs, which they know not how to use, as if, when nature hath finished her work, the dancing-master still is necessary to put it in motion.

Atkinson was at present an example of this observation, which doth so much honour to a profession for which I have a very high regard. He was handsome and exquisitely well made; and yet as he had never learnt to dance, he made so awkward an appearance in Mrs. Ellifon’s parlour, that the good lady herself, who had invited him in, could at first scarce refrain from laughter at his behaviour.

He had not, however, been long in the room, before admiration of his person got the better of such visible ideas. So great is the advantage of beauty in men as well as women, and so sure is this quality

in

in either sex of procuring some regard from the beholder.

The exceeding courteous behaviour of Mrs. Ellifon, joined to that of Amelia and Booth, at length dissipated the uneasiness of Atkinson; and he gained sufficient confidence to tell the company some entertaining stories of accidents, that had happened in the army within his knowledge: which, though they greatly pleased all present, are not however of consequence enough to have a place in this history.

Mrs. Ellifon was so very importunate with her company to stay supper, that they all consented. As for the serjeant, he seemed to be none of the least welcome guests. She was, indeed, so pleased with what she had heard of him, and what she saw of him, that when a little warmed with wine, for she was no flincher at the bottle, she began to indulge some freedoms in her discourse towards him, that a little offended Amelia's delicacy, nay, they did not seem to be highly relished by the other lady. Though I am far from insinuating that these exceeded the bounds of decorum, or were, indeed, greater liberties than ladies of the middle age, and especially widows, do frequently allow to themselves.

C H A P. III.

Relating principally to the affairs of Serjeant Atkinson.

THE next day, when all the same company, Atkinson only excepted, assembled in Amelia's apartment, Mrs. Ellifon presently began to discourse of him, and that in terms not only of approbation, but even of affection. She called him her clever serjeant, and her dear serjeant, repeated often that he was the prettiest fellow in the army, and said it was a thousand pities he had not a commission; for that, if he had, she was sure he would become a general.

'I am of your opinion, madam,' answered Booth;
'and he hath got one hundred pound of his own al-
'ready, if he could find a wife now to help him to
'two or three hundred more, I think he might easily
get

‘ get a commission in a marching regiment ; for I am
‘ convinced there is no colonel in the army would
‘ refuse him.’

‘ Refuse him indeed !’ said Mrs. Ellifon ; ‘ no.
‘ He would be a very pretty colonel that did. And
‘ upon my honour, I believe there are very few ladies
‘ who would refuse him, if he had but a proper op-
‘ portunity of foliciting them. The colonel and the
‘ lady both would be better off, than with one of
‘ those pretty masters that I see walking about, and
‘ dragging their long swords after them, when they
‘ should rather drag their leading-strings.’

‘ Well said,’ cries Booth, ‘ and spoken like a wo-
‘ man of spirit.—Indeed, I believe they would be
‘ both better served.’

‘ True captain,’ answered Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ I would
‘ rather leave the two first syllables out of the word
‘ gentleman, than the last.’

‘ Nay, I assure you,’ replied Booth, ‘ there is not a
‘ quieter creature in the world. Though the fellow
‘ hath the bravery of a lion, he hath the meekness
‘ of a lamb. I can tell you stories enow of that
‘ kind, and so can my dear Amelia when he was a
‘ boy.’

‘ O, if the match sticks there,’ cries Amelia, ‘ I
‘ positively will not spoil his fortune by my silence.
‘ I can answer for him from his infancy, that he was
‘ one of the best natured lads in the world. I will
‘ tell you a story or two of him, the truth of which
‘ I can testify from my own knowledge. When he
‘ was but six years old, he was at play with me
‘ at my mother’s house, and a great pointing-dog bit
‘ him through the leg. The poor lad, in the midst
‘ of the anguish of his wound, declared he was over-
‘ joyed it had not happened to Miss, (for the same
‘ dog had just before snapt at me, and my petticoats
‘ had been my defence.) Another instance of his
‘ goodness, which greatly recommended him to my
‘ father, and which I have loved him for ever since,
‘ was this : my father was a great lover of birds, and
‘ strictly forbad the spoiling of their nests. Poor Joe
‘ was one day caught upon a tree, and being con-
‘ cluded

‘cluded guilty, was severely lashed for it; but it was
 ‘afterwards discovered that another boy, a friend of
 ‘Joe’s, had robbed the nest of its young ones, and
 ‘poor Joe had climbed the tree in order to restore
 ‘them, notwithstanding which, he submitted to the
 ‘punishment, rather than he would impeach his com-
 ‘panion. But if these stories appear childish and
 ‘trifling, the duty and kindness he hath shewn to
 ‘his mother, must recommend him to every one.
 ‘Ever since he hath been fifteen years old, he hath
 ‘more than half supported her; and when my bro-
 ‘ther died, I remember particularly Joe at his desire,
 ‘for he was much his favourite, had one of his suits
 ‘given him, but instead of his becoming finer on
 ‘that occasion, another young fellow came to church
 ‘in my brother’s cloaths, and my old nurse ap-
 ‘peared the same Sunday in a new gown, which
 ‘her son had purchased for her with the sale of his
 ‘legacy.’

‘Well, I protest, he is a very worthy creature,’
 said Mrs. Bennet.

‘He is a charming fellow,’ cries Mrs. Ellison,—
 ‘but then the name of serjeant, Captain Booth,
 ‘there, as the play says, my pride brings me off
 ‘again.’

And whatsoever the fages charge on pride,
 The angels fall, and twenty other good faults be-
 side;

On earth I’m sure—I’m sure—something—calling
 Pride saves man, and our sex too from falling.

Here a footman’s rap at the door shook the room.
 Upon which, Mrs. Ellison running to the window,
 cried out, let me die if it is not my lord, what shall
 I do? I must be at home to him, but suppose he
 should enquire for you, captain, what shall I say? or
 will you go down with me?

The company were in some confusion at this in-
 stant, and before they had agreed on any thing,
 Booth’s little girl came running into the room, and
 said, ‘there was a prodigious great gentleman coming
 ‘up stairs.’ She was immediately followed by his
 lordship,

lordship, who, as he knew Booth must be at home, made very little or no enquiry at the door.

Amelia was taken somewhat at a surprise, but she was too polite to shew much confusion: for though she knew nothing of the town, she had had a genteel education, and kept the best company the country afforded. The ceremonies therefore past as usual, and they all sat down.

His lordship soon addressed himself to Booth, saying, 'As I have what I think good news for you, sir, I could not delay giving myself the pleasure of communicating it to you. I have mentioned your affair where I promised you, and I have no doubt of my success. One may easily perceive, you know, from the manner of people's behaving upon such occasions; and indeed, when I related your case, I found there was much inclination to serve you. Great men, Mr. Booth, must do things in their own time; but I think you may depend on having something done very soon.'

Booth made many acknowledgments for his lordship's goodness, and now a second time paid all the thanks which would have been due, even had the favour been obtained. This art of promising, is the œconomy of a great man's pride, a sort of good husbandry in conferring favours, by which they receive ten-fold in acknowledgments for every obligation, I mean among those who really intend the service: for there are others who cheat poor men of their thanks, without ever designing to deserve them at all.

This matter being sufficiently discussed, the conversation took a gayer turn; and my lord began to entertain the ladies with some of that elegant discourse, which, though most delightful to hear, it is impossible should ever be read.

His lordship was so highly pleased with Amelia, that he could not help being somewhat particular to her; but this particularity distinguished itself only in a higher degree of respect, and was so very polite, and so very distant, that she herself was pleased, and at his departure, which was not till he had far exceeded
2 the

the length of a common visit, declared he was the finest gentleman she had ever seen, with which sentiment her husband and Mrs. Ellifon both entirely concurred.

Mrs. Bennet on the contrary, expressed some little dislike to my lord's complaisance, which she called excessive. 'For my own part,' said she, 'I have not the least relish for those very fine gentlemen; what the world generally calls politeness, I term insincerity; and I am more charmed with the stories which Mrs. Booth told us of the honest serjeant, than with all that the finest gentlemen in the world ever said in their lives.'

'O to be sure,' cries Mrs. Ellifon, '*All for love, or the world well lost*, is a motto very proper for some folks to wear in their coat of arms; but the generality of the world will, I believe, agree with that lady's opinion of my cousin, rather than with Mrs. Bennet.'

Mrs. Bennet, seeing Mrs. Ellifon took offence at what she said, thought proper to make some apology, which was very readily accepted, and so ended the visit.

We cannot, however, put an end to the chapter without observing, that such is the ambitious temper of beauty, that it may always apply to itself that celebrated passage in Lucan,

*Nec quenquam jam ferre potest Cæsare priorem,
Pompeiusve parem.*——

Indeed, I believe, it may be laid down as a general rule, that no woman who hath any great pretensions to admiration, is ever well pleased in a company, where she perceives herself to fill only the second place. This observation, however, I humbly submit to the judgment of the ladies, and hope it will be considered as retracted by me, if they shall dissent from my opinion.

CHAP. IV.

Containing matters that require no preface.

WHEN Booth and his wife were left alone together, they both extremely exulted in their good fortune, in having found so good a friend as his lordship; nor were they wanting in very warm expressions of their gratitude towards Mrs. Ellifon. After which, they began to lay down schemes of living when Booth should have his commission of captain, and after the exactest computation, concluded, that with oeconomy, they should be able to save, at least, fifty pounds a year out of their income, in order to pay their debts.

These matters being well settled, Amelia asked Booth what he thought of Mrs. Bennet. ‘I think, my dear,’ answered Booth, ‘that she hath been formerly a very pretty woman.’ ‘I am mistaken,’ replied she, ‘if she be not a very good creature. I don’t know I ever took such a liking to any one on so short an acquaintance. I fancy she hath been a very spritely woman: for if you observe, she discovers by starts a great vivacity in her countenance.’ ‘I made the same observation,’ cries Booth: ‘sure some strange misfortune hath befallen her.’ ‘A misfortune indeed!’ answered Amelia. ‘Sure, child, you forgot what Mrs. Ellifon told us, that she had lost a beloved husband. A misfortune which I have often wondered at any woman’s surviving,—at which words, she cast a tender look at Booth, and presently afterwards throwing herself upon his neck, cried—O Heavens! what a happy creature am I? when I consider the dangers you have gone through, how I exult in my bliss!’ The good natured reader will suppose that Booth was not deficient in returning such tenderness; after which, the conversation became too fond to be here related.

The next morning Mrs. Ellifon addressed herself to Booth as follows: ‘I shall make no apology, sir, for what I am going to say, as it proceeds from my friendship

‘ friendship to yourself and your dear lady. I am
‘ convinced then, sir, there is something more than
‘ accident in your going abroad only one day in the
‘ week. Now, sir, if, as I am afraid, matters are
‘ not altogether as well as I wish them, I beg, since
‘ I do not believe you are provided with a lawyer,
‘ that you will suffer me to recommend one to you.
‘ The person I shall mention, is, I assure you, of
‘ much ability in his profession, and I have known
‘ him do great services to gentlemen under a cloud.
‘ Do not be ashamed of your circumstances, my dear
‘ friend. They are a much greater scandal to those,
‘ who have left so much merit unprovided for.’

Booth gave Mrs. Ellifon abundance of thanks for her kindness, and explicitly confest to her that her conjectures were right, and without hesitation, accepted the offer of her friend’s assistance.

Mrs. Ellifon then acquainted him with her apprehensions on this account. She said she had both yesterday and this morning seen two or three very ugly suspicious fellows pass several times by her window. ‘ Upon all accounts,’ said she, ‘ my dear sir, I advise you to keep yourself close confined till the lawyer hath been with you. I am sure he will get you your liberty, at least of walking about within the verge—There’s something to be done with the board of green cloth, I don’t know what; but this I know, that several gentlemen have lived here a long time very comfortably, and have defied all the vengeance of their creditors. However, in the meantime, you must be a close prisoner with your lady; and I believe there is no man in England but would exchange his liberty for the same gaol.’

She then departed, in order to send for the attorney, and presently afterwards, the serjeant arrived with news of the like kind. He said he had scraped an acquaintance with Murphy. ‘ I hope your honour will pardon me,’ cries Atkinson, ‘ but I pretended to have a small demand upon your honour myself, and offered to employ him in the business. Upon which, he told me, that if I would go with him to

‘ to the Marshal’s Court, and make affidavit of my
‘ debt, he should be able very shortly to get it me;
‘ for I shall have the captain in hold,’ cries he, ‘ with-
‘ in a day or two. I wish,’ said the serjeant, ‘ I could
‘ do your honour any service. Shall I walk about all
‘ day before the door? or shall I be porter and watch
‘ it in the inside, till your honour can find some
‘ means of securing yourself? I hope you will not be
‘ offended at me, but I beg you would take care of
‘ falling into Murphy’s hands; for he hath the cha-
‘ racter of the greatest villain upon earth. I am afraid
‘ you will think me too bold, sir; but I have a little
‘ money, if it can be of any service, do, pray your
‘ honour, command it. It can never do me so much
‘ good any other way. Consider, sir, I owe all I
‘ have to yourself, and my dear mistress.’

Booth stood a moment, as if he had been thunder-
struck, and then, the tears bursting from his eyes, he
said: ‘ Upon my soul, Atkinson, you overcome me.
‘ I scarce ever heard of so much goodness, nor do I
‘ know how to express my sentiments of it. But be
‘ assured, as for your money, I will not accept it, and
‘ let it satisfy you, that in my present circumstances
‘ it would do me no essential service; but this be as-
‘ sured of likewise, that whilst I live, I shall never
‘ forget the kindness of the offer.—However, as I
‘ apprehend I may be in some danger of fellows get-
‘ ting into the house, for a day or two, as I have no
‘ guard but a poor little girl, I will not refuse the
‘ goodness you offer to shew in my protection. And
‘ I make no doubt but Mrs. Ellison will let you sit in
‘ her parlour for that purpose.’

Atkinson with the utmost readiness undertook the
office of porter; and Mrs. Ellison as readily allotted
him a place in her back-parlour, where he continued
three days together, from eight in the morning till
twelve at night; during which time, he had some-
times the company of Mrs. Ellison, and sometimes
of Booth, Amelia, and Mrs. Bennet too; for this last
had taken as great a fancy to Amelia, as Amelia had to
her; and therefore as Mr. Booth’s affairs were now no
secret in the neighbourhood, made her frequent visits

during the confinement of her husband, and consequently of her own.

Nothing, as I remember, happened in this interval of time, more worthy notice than the following card, which Amelia received from her old acquaintance Mrs. James. ‘Mrs. James sends her compliments to Mrs. Booth, and desires to know how she does; for as she hath not had the favour of seeing her at her own house, or of meeting her in any public place, in so long time, fears it may be owing to ill health.’

Amelia had long given over all thoughts of her friend, and doubted not but that she was as entirely given over by her; she was very much surprised at this message, and under some doubt whether it was not meant as an insult, especially from the mention of public places, which she thought so inconsistent with her present circumstances, of which she supposed Mrs. James was well apprised. However, at the entreaty of her husband, who languished for nothing more than to be again reconciled to his friend James, Amelia undertook to pay the lady a visit, and to examine into the mystery of this conduct, which appeared to her so unaccountable.

Mrs. James received her with a degree of civility that amazed Amelia, no less than her coldness had done before. She resolved to come to an éclaircissement, and having sat out some company that came in, when they were alone together, Amelia, after some silence, and many offers to speak, at last said, ‘my dear Jenny, (if you will now suffer me to call you by so familiar a name) have you entirely forgot a certain young lady who had the pleasure of being your intimate acquaintance at Montpelier?’—‘Whom do you mean, dear madam?’ cries Mrs. James, with great concern. ‘I mean myself,’ answered Amelia—‘You surprise me, madam,’ replied Mrs. James. ‘How can you ask me that question?’ ‘Nay, my dear, I do not intend to offend you,’ cries Amelia; ‘but I am really desirous to solve to myself the reason of that coldness which you shewed me, when you did me the favour of a visit. Can you think,

‘ think, my dear, I was not disappointed, when I expected to meet an intimate friend, to receive a cold formal visitant? I desire you to examine your own heart, and answer me honestly, if you do not think I had some little reason to be dissatisfied with your behaviour?’ ‘ Indeed, Mrs. Booth,’ answered the other lady, ‘ you surprise me very much; if there was any thing displeasing to you in my behaviour, I am extremely concerned at it. I did not know I had been defective in any of the rules of civility, but if I was, madam, I ask your pardon.’ ‘ Is civility then, my dear,’ replied Amelia, ‘ a synonymous term with friendship? could I have expected when I parted the last time with Miss Jenny Bath, to have met her the next time in the shape of a fine lady, complaining of the hardship of climbing up two pair of stairs to visit me, and then approaching me with the distant air of a new or a slight acquaintance? do you think, my dear Mrs. James, if the tables had been turned, if my fortune had been as high in the world as yours, and you in my distress and abject condition, that I would not have climbed as high as the monument to visit you?’ ‘ Sure, madam,’ cries Mrs. James, ‘ I mistake you, or you have greatly mistaken me. Can you complain of my not visiting you, who have owed me a visit almost these three weeks? Nay, did I not even then send you a card, which sure was doing more than all the friendship and good breeding in the world required; but, indeed, as I had met you in no public place, I really thought you was ill?’ ‘ How can you mention public places to me,’ said Amelia, ‘ when you can hardly be a stranger to my present situation? did you not know, madam, that I was ruined?’ ‘ No, indeed, madam, did I not,’ replied Mrs. James, ‘ I am sure I should have been highly concerned if I had.’ ‘ Why, sure, my dear,’ cries Amelia, ‘ you could not imagine that we were in affluent circumstances, when you found us in such a place, and in such a condition.’ ‘ Nay, my dear,’ answered Mrs. James, ‘ since you are pleased to mention it first yourself, I own, I was little surprised to see you in no better lodgings; but I

‘concluded you had your own reasons for liking them ;
 ‘and for my own part, I have laid it down as a posi-
 ‘tive rule, never to enquire into the private affairs of
 ‘any one, especially of my friends. I am not of the
 ‘humour of some ladies, who confine the circle of
 ‘their acquaintance to one part of the town, and
 ‘would not be known to visit in the city for the
 ‘world. For my part, I never dropt an acquaintance
 ‘with any one, while it was reputable to keep it up ;
 ‘and I can solemnly declare, I have not a friend in
 ‘the world for whom I have a greater esteem than I
 ‘have for Mrs. Booth.’

At this instant, the arrival of a new visitant put an end to the discourse, and Amelia soon after took her leave without the least anger, but with some little unavoidable contempt for a lady, in whose opinion, as we have hinted before, outward form and ceremony constituted the whole essence of friendship ; who valued all her acquaintance alike, as each individual served equally to fill up a place in her visiting roll, and who, in reality, had not the least concern for the good qualities or well-being of any of them.

CHAP. V.

Containing much heroic matter.

AT the end of three days, Mrs. Ellison's friend had so far purchased Mr. Booth's liberty, that he could walk again abroad within the verge, without any danger of having a warrant backed against him by the board before he had notice. As for the ill-looking persons that had given the alarm, it was now discovered that another unhappy gentleman, and not Booth, was the object of their pursuit.

Mr. Booth being now delivered from his fears, went, as he had formerly done, to take his morning-walk in the Park. Here he met Colonel Bath in company with some other officers, and very civilly paid his respects to him. But instead of returning the salute, the colonel looked him full in the face with a very stern countenance ; and, if he could be said to take any notice

notice of him, it was in such a manner as to inform him he would take no notice of him.

Booth was not more hurt than surpris'd at this behaviour, and resolv'd to know the reason of it. He therefore watch'd an opportunity till the colonel was alone, and then walk'd boldly up to him, and desir'd to know if he had given him any offence,—the colonel answer'd hastily, 'Sir, I am above being offended with you, nor do I think it consistent with my dignity to make you any answer.' Booth replied, 'I don't know, sir, that I have done any thing to deserve this treatment.'—'Look'ee, sir,' cries the colonel, 'if I had not formerly had some respect for you, I should not think you worth my resentment. However, as you are a gentleman born, and an officer, and as I have had an esteem for you, I will give you some marks of it, by putting it in your power to do yourself justice. I will tell you therefore, sir, that you have acted like a scoundrel.'—'If we were not in the Park,' answer'd Booth warmly, 'I would thank you very properly for that compliment.'—'O sir!' cries the colonel, 'we can be soon in a convenient place.' Upon which, Booth answer'd he would attend him wherever he pleas'd.—The colonel then bid him come along, and strutted forward directly up Constitution-Hill to Hyde-Park, Booth following him at first, and afterwards walking before him, till they came to that place which may be properly call'd the field of blood, being that part a little to the left of the ring, which heroes have chosen for the scene of their exit out of this world.

Booth reach'd the ring some time before the colonel; for he mended not his pace any more than a Spaniard. To say truth, I believe it was not in his power; for he had so long accus'tom'd himself to one and the same strut, that as a horse, us'd always to trotting, can scarce be forc'd into a gallop, so could no passion force the colonel to alter his pace.

At length, however, both parties arriv'd at the lists, where the colonel very deliberately took off his wig and coat, and laid them on the grass, and then drawing his sword, advanced to Booth, who had likewise his

drawn weapon in his hand, but had made no other preparation for the combat.

The combatants now engaged with great fury, and after two or three passes, Booth ran the colonel through the body and threw him on the ground, at the same time possessing himself of the colonel's sword.

As soon as the colonel was become master of his speech, he called out to Booth in a very kind voice, and said, 'you have done my business, and satisfied me that you are a man of honour, and that my brother James must have been mistaken: for I am convinced, that no man who will draw his sword in so gallant a manner, is capable of being a rascal; d—n me, give me a buff, my dear boy, I ask your pardon for that infamous appellation I dishonoured your dignity with; but, d—n me, if it was not purely out of love, and to give you an opportunity of doing yourself justice, which I own you have done like a man of honour. What may be the consequence I know not, but, I hope, at least I shall live to reconcile you with my brother.'

Booth shewed great concern, and even horror in his countenance. 'Why, my dear colonel,' said he, 'would you force me to this? for Heaven's sake, tell me, what I have ever done to offend you.'

'Me!' cried the colonel. 'Indeed, my dear child, you never did any thing to offend me. Nay, I have acted the part of a friend to you in the whole affair. I maintained your cause with my brother as long as decency would permit. I could not flatly contradict him, though, indeed, I scarce believed him. But what could I do; if I had not fought with you, I must have been obliged to have fought with him? however, I hope, what is done will be sufficient, and that matters may be *discommodated* without your being put to the necessity of fighting any more on this occasion.'

'Never regard me, cried Booth eagerly; for Heaven's sake think of your own preservation. Let me put you into a chair, and get you a surgeon.'

'Thou art a noble lad,' cries the colonel, who was now got on his legs, 'and I am glad the business is so well

well over. For though your sword went quite through, it slanted so, that I apprehend there is little danger of life. However, I think there is enough done to put an honourable end to the affair, especially as you was so hasty to disarm me. I bleed a little, but I can walk to the house by the water; and if you will send me a chair thither, I shall be obliged to you.'

As the colonel refused any assistance, (indeed he was very able to walk without it, though with somewhat less dignity than usual) Booth set forward to Grovesnor-Gate, in order to procure the chair, and soon after returned with one to his friend; whom having conveyed into it, he attended himself on foot into Bond-street, where then lived a very eminent surgeon.

The surgeon having probed the wound, turned towards Booth, who was apparently the guilty person, and said with a smile, 'Upon my word, sir, you have performed the business with great dexterity.'

'Sir,' cries the colonel to the surgeon, 'I would not have you imagine I am afraid to die. I think I know more what belongs to the dignity of a man; and, I believe, I have shewn it at the head of a line of battle. Do not impute my concern to that fear, when I ask you whether there is, or is not any danger?'

'Really, colonel,' answered the surgeon, who well knew the complexion of the gentleman then under his hands, 'it would appear like presumption to say, that a man who hath been just run through the body, is in no manner of danger. But this, I think, I may assure you, that I yet perceive no very bad symptoms, and unless something worse should appear, or a fever be the consequence, I hope you may live to be again, with all your dignity, at the head of a line of battle.'

'I am glad to hear that is your opinion,' quoth the colonel, 'for I am not desirous of dying, though I am not afraid of it. But if any thing worse than you apprehend should happen, I desire you will be a witness of my declaration, that this young gentleman is entirely innocent. I forced him to do what he did. My dear

Booth, I am pleased matters are as they are. You are the first man that ever gained an advantage over me; but it was very lucky for you that you disarmed me, and I doubt not, but you have the *equanimity* to think so. If the business, therefore, hath ended without doing any thing to the purpose, it was fortune's pleasure, and neither of our faults.'

Booth heartily embraced the colonel, and assured him of the great satisfaction he had received from the surgeon's opinion; and soon after the two combatants took their leave of each other. The colonel, after he was drest, went in a chair to his lodgings, and Booth walked on foot to his; where he luckily arrived without meeting any of Mr. Murphy's gang; a danger which never once occurred to his imagination till he was out of it.

The affair he had been about, had indeed so entirely occupied his mind, that it had obliterated every other idea; among the rest, it caused him so absolutely to forget the time of the day, that though he had exceeded the time of dining above two hours, he had not the least suspicion of being at home later than usual.

C H A P. VI.

In which the reader will find matter worthy his consideration.

AMELIA having waited above an hour for her husband, concluded, as he was the most punctual man alive, that he had met with some engagement abroad, and sat down to her meal with her children; which, as it was always uncomfortable in the absence of her husband, was very short; so that before his return, all the apparatus of dining was entirely removed.

Booth sat some time with his wife, expecting every minute when the little maid would make her appearance; at last curiosity, I believe, rather than appetite, made him ask, how long it was to dinner? to dinner! my dear, answered Amelia; sure you have dined, I hope? Booth replied in the negative; upon which,

which, his wife started from her chair, and bestirred herself as nimbly to provide him a repast, as the most industrious hostess in the kingdom doth, when some unexpected guest of extraordinary quality arrives at her house.

The reader hath not, I think, from any passages hitherto recorded in this history, had much reason to accuse Amelia of a blameable curiosity; he will not, I hope, conclude that she gave an instance of any such fault, when, upon Booth's having so long overstaid his time, and so greatly mistaken the hour of the day, and upon some other circumstances of his behaviour (for he was too honest to be good at concealing any of his thoughts) she said to him, after he had done eating, 'My dear, I am sure something more than ordinary hath happened to-day, and I beg you will tell me what it is.'

Booth answered, that nothing of any consequence had happened; that he had been detained by a friend, whom he met accidentally, longer than he expected. In short, he made many shuffling and evasive answers, not boldly lying out, which, perhaps, would have succeeded, but poorly and vainly endeavouring to reconcile falsehood with truth. An attempt which seldom fails to betray the most practised deceiver.

How impossible was it therefore for Booth to succeed in an art for which nature had so entirely disqualified him. His countenance indeed confessed faster than his tongue denied; and the whole of his behaviour gave Amelia an alarm, and made her suspect something very bad had happened; and as her thoughts turned presently on the badness of their circumstances, she feared some mischief from his creditors had befallen him: for she was too ignorant of such matters to know, that if he had fallen into the hands of the Philistines, (which is the name given by the faithful to bailiffs) he would hardly have been able so soon to recover his liberty. Booth at last perceived her to be so uneasy, that as he saw no hopes of contriving any fiction to satisfy her, he thought himself obliged to tell her the truth, or at least part of the truth, and confessed that he had had a little skirmish with Colonel

Bath, in which, he said, the colonel had received a slight wound, not at all dangerous; and this, says he, is all the whole matter. ‘If it be so,’ cries Amelia, ‘I thank Heaven no worse hath happened; but why, my dear, will you ever converse with that madman, who can embrace a friend one moment, and fight with him the next?’ ‘Nay, my dear,’ answered Booth, ‘you yourself must confess, though he be a little too much on the *qui vive*, he is a man of great honour and good-nature.’ ‘Tell me not,’ replied she, ‘of such good-nature and honour as would sacrifice a friend, and a whole family to a ridiculous whim. O Heavens!’ cried she, falling upon her knees, from what misery have I escaped, from what have these poor babes escaped through your gracious providence this day!’—Then turning to her husband—she cried—‘But are you sure the monster’s wound is no more dangerous than you say? a monster surely I may call him, who can quarrel with a man that could not, that I am convinced would not offend him.’

Upon this question, Booth repeated the assurances which the surgeon had given them, perhaps with a little enlargement, which pretty well satisfied Amelia; and instead of blaming her husband for what he had done, she tenderly embraced him, and again returned thanks to Heaven for his safety.

In the evening, Booth insisted on paying a short visit to the colonel, highly against the inclination of Amelia, who, by many arguments and entreaties endeavoured to dissuade her husband from continuing an acquaintance; in which, she said, she should always foresee much danger for the future. However, she was at last prevailed upon to acquiesce; and Booth went to the colonel, whose lodgings happened to be in the verge as well as his own.

He found the colonel in his night-gown, and his great chair, engaged with another officer at a game of chess. He rose immediately, and having heartily embraced Booth, presented him to his friend, saying, he had the honour to introduce to him as brave and as *fortitudinous* a man as any in the king’s dominions.—

He

He then took Booth with him into the next room, and desired him not to mention a word of what had happened in the morning, saying, 'I am very well satisfied that no more hath happened; however, as it ended in nothing, I could wish it might remain a secret.' Booth told him he was heartily glad to find him so well, and promised never to mention it more to any one.

The game at chess being but just begun, and neither of the parties having gained any considerable advantage, they neither of them insisted on continuing it; and now the colonel's antagonist took his leave, and left the colonel and Booth together.

As soon as they were alone, the latter earnestly entreated the former to acquaint him with the real cause of his anger; 'for may I perish,' cries Booth, 'if I can even guess what I have ever done to offend either you, or your brother Colonel James.'

'Look'ee, child,' cries the colonel, 'I tell you I am for my own part satisfied: for I am convinced that a man who will fight, can never be a rascal; and therefore, why should you enquire any more of me at present? when I see my brother James, I hope to reconcile all matters, and perhaps no more swords need be drawn on this occasion.' But Booth still persisting in his desire, the colonel, after some hesitation, with a tremendous oath, cried out, 'I do not think myself at liberty to refuse you, after the indignity I offered you; so, since you demand it of me, I will inform you. My brother told me you had used him dishonourably, and had divelicated his character behind his back. He gave me his word too, that he was well assured of what he said. What could I have done, though I own to you I did not believe him, and your behaviour since hath convinced me I was in the right; I must either have given him the lye, and fought with him, or else I was obliged to behave as I did, and fight with you. And now, my lad, I leave it to you to do as you please; but if you are laid under any necessity to do yourself further justice, it is your own fault.'

‘Alas! colonel,’ answered Booth, ‘besides the obligations I have to the colonel, I have really so much love for him, that I think of nothing less than resentment. All I wish, is to have this affair brought to an eclarcissement, and to satisfy him that he is in an error: for though his assertions are cruelly injurious, and I have never deserved them; yet I am convinced he would not say what he did not himself think. Some rascal, envious of his friendship for me, hath belyed me to him; and the only resentment I desire is to convince him of his mistake.’

At these words—the colonel grinned horribly a ghastly smile, or rather sneer, and answered, ‘Young gentleman, you may do as you please; but by the eternal dignity of man, if any man breathing had taken a liberty with my character,—here, here—Mr. Booth (shewing his fingers) here—d—n me, should be his nostrils, he should breathe through my hands, and breathe his last—d—n me.’

Booth answered, ‘I think, colonel, I may appeal to your testimony that I dare do myself justice; since he who dare draw his sword against you, can hardly be supposed to fear any other person; but I repeat to you again, that I love Colonel James so well, and am so greatly obliged to him, that it would be almost indifferent to me, whether I directed my sword against his breast, or my own.’

The colonel’s muscles were considerably softened by Booth’s last speech; but he again contracted them into a vast degree of fierceness, before he cried out—
‘Boy, thou hast reason enough to be vain; for thou art the first person that ever could proudly say he gained an advantage over me in combat. I believe, indeed, thou art not afraid of any man breathing, and as I know thou hast some obligations to my brother, I do not discommend thee; for nothing more becomes the dignity of a man than gratitude. Besides, as I am satisfied my brother can produce the author of the slander—I say, I am satisfied of that, d—n me, if any man alive dares assert the contrary; for that would be to make my brother him-

‘himself a liar, I will make him produce his author ;
‘and then, my dear boy, your doing yourself pro-
‘per justice there, will bring you finely out of the
‘whole affair. As soon as my surgeon gives me leave
‘to go abroad, which, I hope, will be in a few days,
‘I will bring my brother James to a tavern, where
‘you shall meet us ; and I will engage my honour,
‘my whole dignity to you, to make you friends.’

The assurance of the colonel gave Booth great pleasure ; for few persons ever loved a friend better than he did James : and as for doing military justice on the author of that scandalous report which had incensed his friend against him, not Bath himself was ever more ready on such an occasion, than Booth to execute it. He soon after took his leave, and returned home in high spirits to his Amelia, whom he found in Mrs. Ellison’s apartment, engaged in a party at ombre with that lady, and her right honourable cousin.

His lordship had, it seems, had a second interview with the great man, and having obtained further hopes (for I think there was not yet an absolute promise) of success in Mr. Booth’s affairs, his usual good nature brought him immediately to acquaint Mr. Booth with it. As he did not therefore find him at home, and as he met with the two ladies together, he resolved to stay till his friend’s return, which he was assured would not be long, especially as he was so lucky, he said, to have no particular engagement that whole evening.

We remarked before, that his lordship, at the first interview with Amelia, had distinguished her by a more particular address from the other ladies ; but that now appeared to be rather owing to his perfect good breeding, as she was then to be considered as the mistress of the house, than from any other preference. His present behaviour made this still more manifest ; for as he was now in Mrs. Ellison’s apartment, though she was his relation and an old acquaintance, he applied his conversation rather more to her than to Amelia. His eyes, indeed, were now and then guilty of the contrary distinction, but this was only by stealth ; for they constantly withdrew the moment they were dis-

discovered. In short, he treated Amelia with the greatest distance, and at the same time with the most profound and awful respect; his conversation was so general, so lively, and so obliging, that Amelia, when she added to his agreeableness the obligations she had to him for his friendship to Booth, was certainly as much pleased with his lordship, as any virtuous woman can possibly be with any man, besides her own husband.

C H A P. VII.

Containing various matters.

WE have already mentioned the good humour in which Booth returned home; and the reader will easily believe it was not a little increased by the good humour in which he found his company. My lord received him with the utmost marks of friendship and affection, and told him that his affairs went on as well almost as he himself could desire, and that he doubted not very soon to wish him joy of a company.

When Booth had made a proper return to all his lordship's unparalleled goodness, he whispered Amelia that the colonel was entirely out of danger, and almost as well as himself. This made her satisfaction complete, threw her into such spirits, and gave such a lustre to her eyes, that her face, as Horace says, was too dazzling to be looked at; it was certainly too handsome to be looked at without the highest admiration.

His lordship departed about ten o'clock, and left the company in raptures with him, especially the two ladies, of whom it is difficult to say which exceeded the other in his commendations. Mrs. Ellifon swore she believed he was the best of all humankind; and Amelia, without making any exception, declared he was the finest gentleman, and most agreeable man she had ever seen in her life; adding, it was great pity he should remain single. 'That's true indeed,' cries Mrs. Ellifon, 'and I have often lamented it, nay, I am astonished at it, considering the great liking he
' always

‘ always shews for our sex, and he may certainly have
‘ the choice of all. The real reason, I believe, is his
‘ fondness for his sister’s children. I declare, madam,
‘ if you was to see his behaviour to them, you would
‘ think they were his own. Indeed, he is vastly fond
‘ of all manner of children.’ ‘ Good creature,’ cries
Amelia, ‘ if ever he doth me the honour of another
‘ visit, I am resolved I will shew him my little things.
‘ I think, Mrs. Ellifon, as you say my lord loves
‘ children, I may say, without vanity, he will not see
‘ many such.’ ‘ No, indeed, will he not,’ answered
Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ and now I think on’t, madam, I won-
‘ der at my own stupidity in never making the offer
‘ before; but since you put it into my head, if you
‘ will give me leave, I’ll take master and miss to wait
‘ on my lord’s nephew and niece. They are very
‘ pretty behaved children; and little master and miss
‘ will be, I dare swear, very happy in their acquaint-
‘ tance; besides, if my lord himself should see them,
‘ I know what will happen; for he is the most ge-
‘ nerous of all human beings.’

Amelia very readily accepted the favour which Mrs. Ellifon offered her; but Booth expressed some reluctance. ‘ Upon my word, my dear,’ said he, with a smile, ‘ this behaviour of ours puts me in mind of the com-
‘ mon conduct of beggars; who, whenever they re-
‘ ceive a favour, are sure to send other objects to the
‘ same fountain of charity. Don’t we, my dear, re-
‘ pay our obligations to my lord in the same manner,
‘ by sending our children a begging to him?’

‘ O beastly!’ cries Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ how could such
‘ a thought enter your brains! I protest, madam, I
‘ begin to grow ashamed of this husband of yours.
‘ How can you have so vulgar a way of thinking?
‘ Begging, indeed! the poor little dear things a beg-
‘ ging—If my lord was capable of such a thought,
‘ though he was my own brother instead of my cousin,
‘ I should scorn him too much ever to enter his doors.’
—‘ O dear madam,’ answered Amelia, ‘ you take
‘ Mr. Booth too seriously, when he was only in jest;
‘ and the children shall wait upon you whenever you
‘ please.’

Though

Though Booth had been a little more in earnest than Amelia had represented him, and was not, perhaps, quite so much in the wrong as he was considered by Mrs. Ellifon; yet, seeing there were two to one against him, he wisely thought proper to recede, and let his smile go off with that air of a jest, which his wife had given it.

Mrs. Ellifon, however, could not let it pass without paying some compliments to Amelia's understanding, nor without some obscure reflexions upon Booth, with whom she was more offended than the matter required. She was indeed a woman of most profuse generosity, and could not bear a thought which she deemed vulgar or sneaking. She afterwards launched forth the most profuse encomiums of his lordship's liberality, and concluded the evening with some instances which he had given of that virtue, which, if not the noblest, is, perhaps, one of the most useful to society, with which great and rich men can be endowed.

The next morning early, Serjeant Atkinson came to wait on Lieutenant Booth, and desired to speak with his honour in private. Upon which, the lieutenant and serjeant took a walk together in the Park. Booth expected every minute when the serjeant would open his mouth, under which expectation, he continued till he came to the end of the Mall, and so he might have continued till he came to the end of the world: for though several words stood at the end of the serjeant's lips, there they were likely to remain forever. He was indeed in the condition of a miser, whom a charitable impulse hath impelled to draw a few pence to the edge of his pocket, where they are altogether as secure, as if they were in the bottom: for, as the one hath not the heart to part with a farthing; so neither had the other the heart to speak a word.

Booth at length wondering that the serjeant did not speak, asked him, what his business was; when the latter, with a stammering voice, began the following apology: 'I hope, sir, your honour will not be angry, nor take any thing amiss of me. I do assure
you,

‘ you, it was not of my seeking, nay, I dare not proceed in the matter without first asking your leave. Indeed, if I had taken any liberties from the goodness you have been pleased to shew me, I should look upon myself as one of the most worthless and despicable of wretches; but nothing is farther from my thoughts. I know the distance which is between us; and because your honour hath been so kind and good as to treat me with more familiarity than any other officer ever did, if I had been base enough to take any freedoms, or to encroach upon your honour’s goodness, I should deserve to be whipt through the regiment. I hope therefore, sir, you will not suspect me of any such attempt.’

‘ What can all this mean, Atkinson,’ cries Booth; ‘ what mighty matter would you introduce with all this previous apology?’

‘ I am almost ashamed and afraid to mention it,’ answered the serjeant, ‘ and yet I am sure, your honour will believe what I have said, and not think any thing owing to my own presumption; and at the same time, I have no reason to think you would do any thing to spoil my fortune in an honest way, when it is dropt into my lap without my own seeking. For may I perish if it is not all the lady’s own goodness, and I hope in Heaven, with your honour’s leave, I shall live to make her amends for it.’

—In a word, that we may not detain the reader’s curiosity quite so long as he did Booth’s, he acquainted that gentleman that he had had an offer of marriage from a lady of his acquaintance, to whose company he had introduced him, and desired his permission to accept of it.

Booth must have been very dull indeed, if after what the serjeant had said, and after what he had heard Mrs. Ellifon say, he had wanted any other information concerning the lady. He answered him briskly and chearfully, that he had his free consent to marry any woman whatever; ‘ and the greater and richer she is,’ added he, ‘ the more I shall be pleased with the match. I don’t enquire who the lady is,’ said he,

he, smiling, 'but I hope she will make as good a wife, as I am convinced her husband will deserve.'

'Your honour hath been always too good to me,' cries Atkinson, 'but this I promise you, I will do all in my power to merit the kindness she is pleased to shew me. I will be bold to say she will marry an honest man, though he is but a poor one; and she shall never want any thing which I can give her or do for her, while my name is Joseph Atkinson.'

'And so her name is a secret, Joe; is it?' cries Booth.

'Why, sir,' answered the serjeant, 'I hope your honour will not insist upon knowing that, as I think it would be dishonourable in me to mention it.'

'Not at all,' replied Booth, 'I am the farthest in the world from any such desire. I know thee better than to imagine thou wouldst disclose the name of a fair lady.' Booth then shook Atkinson heartily by the hand, and assured him earnestly of the joy he had in his good fortune; for which the good serjeant failed not of making all proper acknowledgments. After which they parted, and Booth returned home.

As Mrs. Ellison opened the door, Booth hastily rushed by; for he had the utmost difficulty to prevent laughing in her face. He ran directly up stairs, and throwing himself into a chair, discharged such a fit of laughter as greatly surprised, and at first, almost frightened his wife.

Amelia, it will be supposed, presently enquired into the cause of this phenomenon, with which Booth, as soon as he was able (for that was not within a few minutes) acquainted her. The news did not affect her in the same manner it had affected her husband. On the contrary, she cried, 'I protest I cannot guess what makes you see it in so ridiculous a light. I really think Mrs. Ellison hath chosen very well. I am convinced Joe will make her one of the best of husbands; and in my opinion, that is the greatest blessing a woman can be possessed of.'

However, when Mrs. Ellison came into her room a little while afterwards to fetch the children, Amelia became
of

of a more risible disposition, especially when the former turning to Booth, who was then present, said, 'So, captain, my jantee serjeant was very early here this morning. I scolded my maid heartily for letting him wait so long in the entry like a lacquais, when she might have shewn him into my inner apartment.' At which words, Booth burst out into a very loud laugh; and Amelia herself could no more prevent laughing than she could blushing.

'Heyday!' cries Mrs. Ellifon, 'what have I said to cause all this mirth?' and at the same time blushed, and looked very silly, as is always the case with persons who suspect themselves to be the objects of laughter, without absolutely taking what it is which makes them ridiculous.

Booth still continued laughing; but Amelia composing her muscles, said, 'I ask your pardon, dear Mrs. Ellifon; but Mr. Booth hath been in a strange giggling humour all this morning; and I really think it is infectious.'

'I ask your pardon too, madam,' cries Booth, 'but one is sometimes unaccountably foolish.'

'Nay, but seriously,' said she, 'what is the matter?—Something I said about the serjeant, I believe; but you may laugh as much as you please, I am not ashamed of owning, I think him one of the prettiest fellows I ever saw in my life; and, I own, I scolded my maid at suffering him to wait in my entry; and where is the mighty ridiculous matter, pray?'

'None at all,' answered Booth, 'and, I hope, the next time he will be ushered into your inner apartment.'

'Why should he not, sir?' replied she, 'for wherever he is ushered, I am convinced he will behave himself as a gentleman should.'

Here Amelia put an end to the discourse, or it might have proceeded to very great lengths: for Booth was of a waggish inclination; and Mrs. Ellifon was not a lady of the nicest delicacy.

C H A P. VIII.

The heroic behaviour of Colonel Bath.

BOOTH went this morning to pay a second visit to the colonel, where he found Colonel James. Both the colonel and the lieutenant appeared a little shocked at their first meeting; but matters were soon cleared up; for the former presently advanced to the latter, shook him heartily by the hand, and said—
 ‘ Mr. Booth, I am ashamed to see you; for I have injured you, and I heartily ask your pardon. I am now perfectly convinced, that what I hinted to my brother, and which I find had like to have produced such fatal consequences, was entirely groundless. If you will be contented with my asking your pardon, and spare me the disagreeable remembrance of what led me into my error, I shall esteem it as the highest obligation.’

Booth answered, ‘ As to what regards yourself, my dear colonel, I am abundantly satisfied; but, as I am convinced, some rascal hath been my enemy with you in the cruellest manner, I hope you will not deny me the opportunity of kicking him through the world.’

‘ By all the dignity of man,’ cries Colonel Bath, ‘ the boy speaks with spirit, and his request is reasonable.’

Colonel James hesitated a moment, and then whispered Booth that he would give him all the satisfaction imaginable, concerning the whole affair, when they were alone together; upon which, Booth addressing himself to Colonel Bath, the discourse turned on other matters, during the remainder of the visit, which was but short, and then both went away together, leaving Colonel Bath as well as it was possible to expect, more to the satisfaction of Booth than of Colonel James, who would not have been displeased if his wound had been more dangerous: for he was grown somewhat weary of a disposition that he rather called captious than heroic, and which, as he every day more and more hated his wife, he apprehended might some time

or

or other give him some trouble: for Bath was the most affectionate of brothers, and had often swore in the presence of James, that he would eat any man alive who should use his sister ill.

Colonel Bath was well satisfied that his brother and the lieutenant were gone out with a design of tilting, from which he offered not a syllable to dissuade them, as he was convinced it was right, and that Booth could not in honour take, nor the colonel give any less satisfaction. When they had been gone therefore, about half an hour, he rang his bell, to enquire if there was any news of his brother; a question which he repeated every ten minutes, for the space of two hours, when having heard nothing of him, he began to conclude that both were killed on the spot.

While he was in this state of anxiety, his sister came to see him; for, notwithstanding his desire of keeping it a secret, the duel had blazed all over the town. After receiving some kind congratulations on his safety, and some unkind hints concerning the warmth of his temper, the colonel asked her when she had seen her husband; she answered, not that morning. He then communicated to her his suspicion, told her he was convinced his brother had drawn his sword that day, and that as neither of them had heard anything from him, he began to apprehend the worst that could happen.

Neither Miss Bellamy, nor Mrs. Cibber, were ever in a greater consternation on the stage, than now appeared in the countenance of Mrs. James. ‘Good Heavens! brother,’ cries she, ‘what do you tell me! you have frightened me to death.—Let your man get me a glass of water immediately, if you have not a mind to see me die before your face. When, where, how was this quarrel, why did you not prevent it, if you knew of it? is it not enough to be every day tormenting me with hazarding your own life, but must you bring the life of one who you know must be and ought to be so much the dearest of all to me, into danger? take your sword, brother, take your sword, and plunge it into my bosom;

‘ bosom ; it would be kinder of you than to fill it
‘ with such dreads and terrors.’—Here she swallowed
the glass of water ; and then threw herself back in her
chair, as if she had intended to faint away.

Perhaps, if she had so, the colonel would have lent
her no assistance ; for she had hurt him more than by
ten thousand stabs. He sat erect in his chair, with
his eye-brows knit, his forehead wrinkled, his eyes
flashing with fire, his teeth grating against each other,
and breathing horror all around him. In this posture,
he sat for some time silent, casting disdainful looks at
his sister. At last, his voice found its way through a
passion which had almost choaked him, and he cried
out : ‘ Sister, what have I done to deserve the opinion
‘ you express of me ? which of my actions hath made
‘ you conclude that I am a rascal and a coward ? look
‘ at that poor sword, which never woman yet saw but in
‘ its sheath, what hath that done to merit your desire
‘ that it should be contaminated with the blood of a
‘ woman ?’

‘ Alas ! brother,’ cried she, ‘ I know not what you
‘ say ; you are desirous, I believe, to terrify me out of
‘ the little senses I have left. What can I have said in
‘ the agonies of grief, into which you threw me, to
‘ deserve this passion ?’

‘ What have you said,’ answered the colonel, ‘ you
‘ have said that which if a man had spoken, nay,
‘ d—n me, if he had but hinted that he durst even
‘ think, I would have made him eat my sword, by
‘ all the dignity of man, I would have crumbled his
‘ soul into powder.—But, I consider that the words
‘ were spoken by a woman, and I am calm again.
‘ Consider, my dear, that you are my sister, and be-
‘ have yourself with more spirit. I have only men-
‘ tioned to you my surmise. It may not have hap-
‘ pened as I suspect ; but let what will have happen-
‘ ed, you will have the comfort that your husband
‘ hath behaved himself with becoming dignity, and
‘ lies in the bed of honour.’

‘ Talk not to me of such comfort,’ replied the lady,
‘ it is a loss I cannot survive ; but why do I sit here
‘ lamenting myself ? I will go this instant and know
‘ the

‘ the worst of my fate, if my trembling limbs will
‘ carry me to my coach.—Good morrow, dear bro-
‘ ther, whatever becomes of me, I am glad to find
‘ you out of danger.’—The colonel paid her his
proper compliments, and she then left the room, but
returned instantly back; saying, ‘ Brother, I must
‘ beg the favour of you to let your footman step to
‘ my mantua-maker, I am sure it is a miracle in my
‘ present distracted condition, how it came into my
‘ head.’ The footman was presently summoned, and
Mrs. James delivered him his message, which was to
countermand the orders which she had given that
very morning, to make her up a new suit of brocade.
‘ Heaven knows,’ says she, ‘ now, when I can wear
‘ brocade, or whether ever I shall wear it.’ And
now having repeated her message with great exact-
ness, lest there should be any mistake, she again la-
mented her wretched situation, and then departed,
leaving the colonel in full expectation of hearing
speedy news of the fatal issue of the battle.

But though the reader should entertain the same
curiosity, we must be excused from satisfying it, till
we have first accounted for an incident which we have
related in this very chapter, and which we think de-
serves some solution. The critic, I am convinced,
already is apprized that I mean the friendly behaviour
of James to Booth, which, from what we had before
recorded, seemed so little to be expected.

It must be remembered, that the anger which the
former of these gentlemen had conceived against the
latter, arose entirely from the false account given by
Miss Matthews of Booth, whom that lady had accused
to Colonel James of having as basely as wickedly tra-
duced his character.

Now, of all the ministers of vengeance, there are
none with whom the devil deals so treacherously, as
with those whom he employs in executing the mis-
chievous purposes of an angry mistress; for no sooner
is revenge executed on an offending lover, than it is
sure to be repented, and all the anger which before
raged against the beloved object, returns with double
fury on the head of his assassin.

Miss

Miss Matthews, therefore, no sooner heard that Booth was killed, (for so was the report at first, and by a colonel of the army) than she immediately concluded it to be James. She was extremely shocked with the news, and her heart instantly began to relent. All the reasons on which she had founded her love, recurred in the strongest and liveliest colours to her mind, and all the causes of her hatred sunk down and disappeared; or if the least remembrance of any thing which had disobliged her remained, her heart became his zealous advocate, and soon satisfied her that her own fates were more to be blamed than he, and that without being a villain, he could have acted no otherwise than he had done.

In this temper of mind, she looked on herself as the murderer of an innocent man, and what to her was much worse, of the man she had loved, and still did love with all the violence imaginable. She looked on James as the tool with which she had done this murder; and as it is usual for people who have rashly or inadvertently made any animate or inanimate thing the instrument of mischief, to hate the innocent means by which the mischief was effected: (for this is a subtle method which the mind invents to excuse ourselves, the last objects on whom we would willingly wreak our vengeance;) so Miss Matthews now hated and cursed James as the efficient cause of that act which she herself had contrived, and laboured to carry into execution.

She sat down therefore in a furious agitation, little short of madness, and wrote the following letter:

‘ I Hope this will find you in the hands of justice,
‘ for the murder of one of the best friends that ever
‘ man was blest with. In one sense, indeed, he may
‘ seem to have deserved his fate, by chusing a fool
‘ for his friend; for who but a fool would have be-
‘ lieved what the anger and rage of an injured woman
‘ suggested; a story so improbable, that I could
‘ scarce be thought in earnest when I mentioned it.
‘ Know then, cruel wretch, that poor Booth loved
‘ you of all men breathing, and was, I believe, in
‘ your

‘ your commendation, guilty of as much falsehood,
 ‘ as I was in what I told you concerning him.

‘ If this knowledge makes you miserable, it is no
 ‘ more than you have made

‘ The unhappy

‘ F. MATTHEWS.’

C H A P. IX.

Being the last chapter of the fifth book.

WE shall now return to Colonel James and Mr. Booth, who walked together from Colonel Bath’s lodging with much more peaceable intention than that gentleman had conjectured, who dreamt of nothing but swords and guns, and implements of war.

The bird-cage walk in the Park was the scene appointed by James for unburthening his mind. Thither they came, and there James acquainted Booth with all that which the reader knows already, and gave him the letter which we have inserted at the end of the last chapter.

Booth exprest great astonishment at this relation, not without venting some detestation of the wickedness of Miss Matthews; upon which, James took him up, saying, he ought not to speak with such abhorrence of faults, which love for him had occasioned.

‘ Can you mention love, my dear colonel,’ cried Booth, ‘ and such a woman in the same breath?’

‘ Yes, faith! can I,’ says James, ‘ for the devil take me, if I know a more lovely woman in the world.’ Here he began to describe her whole person; but as we cannot insert all the description, so we shall omit it all; and concluded with saying, ‘ curse me, if I don’t think her the finest creature in the universe. I would give half my estate, Booth, she loved me as well as she doth you. Though, on second consideration, I believe I should repent that bargain; for then, very possibly, I should not care a farthing for her.’

‘ You will pardon me, dear colonel,’ answered Booth; ‘ but to me there appears somewhat very singular

‘gular in your way of thinking. Beauty is indeed
‘the object of liking, great qualities of admiration,
‘good ones of esteem; but the devil take me, if I
‘think any thing but love to be the object of love.’

‘Is there not something too selfish,’ replied James,
‘in that opinion; but without considering it in that
‘light, is it not of all things the most insipid? all
‘oil! all sugar! zounds! it is enough to cloy the
‘sharp-set appetite of a parson. Acids surely are the
‘most likely to quicken.’

‘I do not love reasoning in allegories,’ cries Booth,
‘but with regard to love, I declare I never found any
‘thing cloying in it. I have lived almost alone with
‘my wife near three years together, was never tired
‘with her company, nor ever wished for any other;
‘and I am sure, I never tasted any of the acid you
‘mention to quicken my appetite.’

‘This is all very extraordinary and romantic to
‘me,’ answered the colonel. ‘If I was to be shut
‘up three years with the same woman, which
‘Heaven forbid! nothing, I think, could keep me
‘alive, but a temper as violent as that of Miss Mat-
‘thews. As to love, it would make me sick to
‘death, in the twentieth part of that time. If I was
‘so condemned, let me see, what would I wish the
‘woman to be? I think no one virtue would be suffi-
‘cient. With the spirit of a tigress, I would have
‘her be a prude, a scold, a scholar, a critic, a wit,
‘a politician, and a jacobite; and then, perhaps,
‘eternal opposition would keep up our spirits; and
‘wishing one another daily at the devil, we should
‘make a shift to drag on a damnable state of life,
‘without much spleen or vapours.’

‘And so you do not intend,’ cries Booth, ‘to break
‘with this woman.’

‘Not more than I have already, if I can help it,’
answered the colonel.

‘And you will be reconciled to her,’ said Booth.

‘Yes, faith! will I, if I can,’ answered the colo-
nel——‘I hope you have no objection.’

‘None, my dear friend,’ said Booth, ‘unless on
‘your account.’

‘I do

‘ I do believe you,’ said the colonel, and yet let
‘ me tell you, you are a very extraordinary man, not
‘ to desire me to quit her on your own account. Up-
‘ on my soul, I begin to pity the woman, who hath
‘ placed her affection, perhaps, on the only man in
‘ England of your age, who would not return it. But
‘ for my part, I promise you, I like her beyond all
‘ other women ; and whilst that is the case, my boy,
‘ if her mind was as full of iniquity as Pandora’s box
‘ was of diseases, I’d hug her close in my arms, and
‘ only take as much care as possible to keep the lid
‘ down for fear of mischief.---But come, dear Booth,’
said he, ‘ let us consider your affairs ; for I am ashamed
‘ of having neglected them so long ; and the only
‘ anger I have against this wench, is, that she was the
‘ occasion of it.’

Booth then acquainted the colonel with the pro-
mises he had received from the noble lord : upon
which, James shook him by the hand, and heartily
wished him joy, crying, ‘ I do assure you, if you have
‘ his interest, you will need no other ; I did not know
‘ you was acquainted with him.’

To which Mr. Booth answered, that he was but a
new acquaintance, and that he was recommended to
him by a lady.

‘ A lady,’ cries the colonel, — ‘ well, I don’t ask
‘ her name. You are a happy man, Booth, amongst
‘ the women ; and I assure you, you could have no
‘ stronger recommendation. The peer loves the la-
‘ dies, I believe, as well as ever Mark Antony did ;
‘ and it is not his fault, if he hath not spent as much
‘ upon them. If he once fixes his eye upon a wo-
‘ man, he will stick at nothing to get her.’

‘ Ay, indeed !’ cries Booth. ‘ Is that his character ?’

‘ Ay, faith !’ answered the colonel, ‘ and the cha-
‘ racter of most men besides him. Few of them, I
‘ mean, will stick at any thing beside their money.
‘ Jusque à la Bourse, is sometimes the boundary of
‘ love as well as friendship. And, indeed, I never
‘ knew any other man part with his money so very
‘ freely on these occasions. You see, dear Booth, the
‘ confidence I have in your honour.’

‘ I hope, indeed, you have,’ cries Booth, ‘ but I don’t see what instance you now give me of that confidence.’

‘ Have not I shewn you,’ answered James, where you may carry your goods to market? I can assure you, my friend, that is a secret I would not impart to every man in your situation, and all circumstances considered.’

‘ I am very sorry, sir,’ cries Booth very gravely, and turning as pale as death, ‘ you should entertain a thought of this kind. A thought which hath almost frozen up my blood. I am unwilling to believe there are such villains in the world; but there is none of them whom I should detest half so much as myself, if my own mind had ever suggested to me a hint of that kind. I have tasted of some distresses of life, and I know not to what greater I may be driven; but my honour, I thank Heaven, is in my own power, and I can boldly say to fortune, she shall not rob me of it.’

‘ Have I not exprest that confidence, my dear Booth?’ answered the colonel. ‘ And what you say now well justifies my opinion; for I do agree with you, that, considering all things, it would be the highest instance of dishonour.’

‘ Dishonour, indeed!’ returned Booth. ‘ What to prostitute my wife!—Can I think there is such a wretch breathing?’

‘ I don’t know that,’ said the colonel; ‘ but I am sure, it was very far from my intention to insinuate the least hint of any such matter to you. Nor can I imagine how you yourself could conceive such a thought. The goods I meant, were no other than the charming person of Miss Matthews; for whom I am convinced my lord would bid a swinging price against me.’

Booth’s countenance greatly cleared up at this declaration, and he answered with a smile, that he hoped he need not give the colonel any assurances on that head. However, though he was satisfied with regard to the colonel’s suspicions; yet some chimeras now arose in his brain, which gave him

no very agreeable sensations. What these were the sagacious reader may probably suspect; but if he should not, we may, perhaps, have occasion to open them in the sequel. Here we will put an end to this dialogue, and to the fifth book of this history.

AMELIA.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

Panegyrics on beauty, with other grave matters.

THE Colonel and Booth walked together to the latter's lodging; for as it was not that day in the week in which all parts of the town are indifferent, Booth could not wait on the colonel.

When they arrived in Spring-Garden, Booth to his great surprise found no one at home but the maid. In truth Amelia had accompanied Mrs. Ellifon and her children to his lordship's; for as her little girl shewed a great unwillingness to go without her, the fond mother was easily persuaded to make one of the company.

Booth had scarce ushered the colonel up to his apartment, when a servant from Mrs. James knocked hastily at the door. The lady not meeting with her husband at her return home, began to despair of him, and performed every thing which was decent on the occasion. An apothecary was presently called with Hartshorn and Sal Volatile, a doctor was sent for, and messengers were dispatched every way; amongst the rest, one was sent to enquire at the lodgings of his supposed antagonist.

The servant hearing that his master was alive and well above stairs, ran up eagerly to acquaint him with the dreadful situation in which he left his miserable lady at home, and likewise with the occasion of all her

her distress, saying, that his lady had been at her brother's, and had there heard that his honour was killed in a duel by Captain Booth.

The colonel smiled at this account, and bid the servant make haste back to contradict it.--And then turning to Booth, he said, 'Was there ever such another fellow as this brother of mine? I thought indeed his behaviour was somewhat odd at the time. I suppose he overheard me whisper that I would give you satisfaction, and thence concluded, we went together with a design of tilting.--D--n the fellow, I begin to grow heartily sick of him, and wish I could get well rid of him without cutting his throat, which I sometimes apprehend he will insist on my doing, as a return for my getting him made a lieutenant-colonel.'

Whilst these two gentlemen were commenting on the character of the third, Amelia and her company returned, and all presently came up stairs, not only the children, but the two ladies, laden with trinkets as if they had been come from a fair. Amelia, who had been highly delighted all the morning with the excessive pleasure which her children enjoyed, when she saw Colonel James with her husband, and perceived the most manifest marks of that reconciliation, which she knew had been so long and so earnestly wished by Booth, became so transported with joy that her happiness was scarce capable of addition. Exercise had painted her face with vermillion; and the highest good-humour had so sweetened every feature, and a vast flow of spirits had so lightened up her bright eyes, that she was all a blaze of beauty. She seemed, indeed, as Milton sublimely describes Eve,

----- adorned

With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow
To make her amiable -----

Again,

Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,
In ev'ry gesture, dignity and love.

Or, as Waller sweetly, though less sublimely, sings :

Sweetness, truth, and every grace,
Which time and use are wont to teach,
The eye may in a moment reach,
And read distinctly in her face.

Or to mention one poet more, and him of all the sweetest, she seemed to be the very person of whom Suckling wrote the following lines, where, speaking of Cupid, he says,

—All his lovely looks, his pleasing fires,
All his sweet motions, all his taking smiles,
All that awakes, all that inflames desires,
All that sweetly commands, all that beguiles,
He does into one pair of eyes convey,
And there begs leave that he himself may stay.

Such was Amelia at this time when she entered the room, and having paid her respects to the colonel, she went up to her husband, and cried, ‘O my dear! never were any creatures so happy as your little things have been this whole morning; and all owing to my lord’s goodness; sure never was any thing so good-natured and so generous!—She then made the children produce their presents, the value of which amounted to a pretty large sum; for there was a gold watch amongst the trinkets that cost above twenty guineas.

Instead of discovering so much satisfaction on this occasion as Amelia expected, Booth very gravely answered, ‘And pray, my dear, how are we to repay all these obligations to his lordship?’ ‘How can you ask so strange a question?’ cries Mrs. Ellifon, ‘how little do you know of the soul of generosity (for sure my cousin deserves that name) when you call a few little trinkets given to children, an obligation?’ ‘Indeed, my dear,’ cries Amelia, ‘I would have stopped his hand, if it had been possible; nay, I was forced at last absolutely to refuse, or I believe he would have laid a hundred pound out on the children: for I never saw any one so fond of children, which convinces me he is one of the best of men; but I ask your pardon, colonel,’ said she, turning

turning to him, ' I should not entertain you with these subjects ; yet I know you have goodness enough to excuse the folly of a mother.'

The colonel made a very low assenting bow ; and soon after they all sat down to a small repast ; for the colonel had promised Booth to dine with him when they first came home together ; and what he had since heard from his own house, gave him still less inclination than ever to repair thither.

But besides both these, there was a third and stronger inducement to him to pass the day with his friend ; and this was the desire of passing it with his friend's wife. When the colonel had first seen Amelia in France, she was but just recovered from a consumptive habit, and looked pale and thin ; besides, his engagements with Miss Bath at that time took total possession of him, and guarded his heart from the impressions of another woman ; and when he had dined with her in town, the vexations through which she had lately passed, had somewhat deadened her beauty ; besides he was then engaged, as we have seen, in a very warm pursuit of a new mistress ; but now he had no such impediment : for though the reader hath just before seen his warm declarations of a passion for Miss Matthews ; yet it may be remembered that he had been in possession of her for above a fortnight ; and one of the happy properties of this kind of passion is, that it can with equal violence love half a dozen, or half a score, different objects at one and the same time.

But indeed such were the charms now displayed by Amelia, of which we endeavoured above to draw some faint resemblance, that perhaps no other beauty could have secured him from their influence ; and here to confess a truth in his favour, however the grave, or rather the hypocritical part of mankind may censure it, I am firmly persuaded that to withdraw admiration from exquisite beauty, or to feel no delight in gazing at it, is as impossible as to feel no warmth from the most scorching rays of the sun. To run away is all that is in our power : and yet in the former case, if it must be allowed we have the power of running

away, it must be allowed also, that it requires the strongest resolution to execute it: for when, as Dryden says,

All paradise is opened in a face,
how natural is the desire of going thither! and how difficult to quit the lovely prospect!

And yet however difficult this may be, my young readers, it is absolutely necessary, and that immediately too: flatter not yourselves that fire will not scorch as well as warm, and the longer we stay within its reach, the more we shall burn. The admiration of a beautiful woman, though the wife of our dearest friend, may at first perhaps be innocent; but let us not flatter ourselves it will always remain so; desire is sure to succeed; and wishes, hopes, designs, with a long train of mischiefs, tread close at our heels. In affairs of this kind we may most properly apply the well-known remark of *nemo repente fuit turpissimus*. It fares indeed with us on this occasion, as with the unwary traveller in some parts of Arabia the desert, whom the treacherous sands imperceptibly betray 'till he is overwhelmed and lost. In both cases the only safety is by withdrawing our feet the very first moment we perceive them sliding.

This digression may appear impertinent to some readers; we could not, however, avoid the opportunity of offering the above hints; since of all passions there is none against which we should so strongly fortify ourselves as this, which is generally called love: for no other lays before us, especially in the tumultuous days of youth, such sweet, such strong, and almost irresistible temptations; none hath produced in private life such fatal and lamentable tragedies; and what is worst of all, there is none to whose poison and infatuation the best of minds are so liable. Ambition scarce ever produces any evil, but when it reigns in cruel and savage bosoms; and avarice seldom flourishes at all but in the basest and poorest soil. Love, on the contrary, sprouts usually up in the richest and noblest minds; but there, unless nicely watched, pruned, and cultivated, and carefully kept clear of those
vicious

vicious weeds which are too apt to furround it, it branches forth into wildness and disorder, produces nothing desirable, but choaks up and kills whatever is good and noble in the mind where it so abounds. In short, to drop the allegory, not only tenderness and good-nature, but bravery, generosity, and every virtue are often made the instruments of effecting the most atrocious purposes of this all-subduing tyrant.

C H A P. II.

Which will not appear, we presume, unnatural to all married Readers.

IF the table of poor Booth afforded but an indifferent repast to the colonel's hunger, here was most excellent entertainment of a much higher kind. The colonel began now to wonder within himself at his not having before discovered such incomparable beauty and excellence. This wonder was indeed so natural, that lest it should arise likewise in the reader, we thought proper to give the solution of it in the preceding chapter.

During the first two hours, the colonel scarce ever had his eyes off from Amelia; for he was taken by surprize, and his heart was gone before he suspected himself to be in any danger. His mind however, no sooner suggested a certain secret to him, than it suggested some degree of prudence to him at the same time; and the knowledge that he had thoughts to conceal, and the care of concealing them, had birth at one and the same instant. During the residue of the day therefore, he grew more circumspect, and contented himself with now and then stealing a look by chance, especially as the more than ordinary gravity of Booth made him fear that his former behaviour had betrayed to Booth's observation the great and sudden liking he had conceived for his wife, even before he had observed it in himself.

Amelia continued the whole day in the highest spirits and highest good humour imaginable; never once remarking that appearance of discontent in her husband,

band, of which the colonel had taken notice; so much more quick-sighted, as we have somewhere else hinted, is guilt than innocence. Whether Booth had in reality made any such observations on the colonel's behaviour as he had suspected, we will not undertake to determine; yet so far may be material to say, as we can with sufficient certainty, that the change in Booth's behaviour that day from what was usual with him, was remarkable enough. None of his former vivacity appeared in his conversation; and his countenance was altered from being the picture of sweetness and good humour, not indeed to sourness or moroseness, but to gravity and melancholy.

Tho' the colonel's suspicion had the effect which we have mentioned on his behaviour; yet it could not persuade him to depart. In short, he sat in his chair as if confined to it by enchantment, stealing looks now and then, and humouring his growing passion, without having command enough over his limbs to carry him out of the room, till decency at last forced him to put an end to his preposterous visit. When the husband and wife were left alone together, the latter resumed the subject of her children, and gave Booth a particular narrative of all that had passed at his Lordship's, which he, tho' something had certainly disconcerted him, affected to receive with all the pleasure he could; and this affectation, however awkwardly he acted his part, passed very well on Amelia: for she could not well conceive a displeasure, of which she had not the least hint of any cause; and indeed at a time, when, from his reconciliation with *James*, she imagined her husband to be entirely and perfectly happy.

The greatest part of that night Booth past awake; and if during the residue he might be said to sleep, he could scarce be said to enjoy repose; his eyes were no sooner closed, than he was pursued and haunted by the most frightful and terrifying dreams, which threw him into so restless a condition, that he soon disturbed his Amelia, and greatly alarmed her with apprehensions that he had been seized by some dreadful disease, though he had not the least symptoms of a fever
by

by any extraordinary heat, or any other indication, but was rather colder than usual.

As Booth assured his wife that he was very well, but found no inclination to sleep, she likewise bid adieu to her slumbers, and attempted to entertain him with her conversation. Upon which his lordship occurred as the first topic; and she repeated to him all the stories which she had heard from Mrs. Ellison, of the peer's goodness to his sister and his nephew and niece. 'It is impossible, my dear,' says she, 'to describe their fondness for their uncle, which is to me an incontestable sign of a parent's goodness.'—In this manner she ran on for several minutes, concluding at last, that it was pity so very few had such generous minds joined to immense fortunes.

Booth, instead of making a direct answer to what Amelia had said, cried coldly, 'But do you think, my dear, it was right to accept all those expensive toys which the children brought home? And I ask you again, what return we are to make for these obligations?'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you see this matter in too serious a light. Though I am the last person in the world who would lessen his lordship's goodness, (indeed I shall always think we are both infinitely obliged to him) yet sure you must allow the expence to be a mere trifle to such a vast fortune. As for return, his own benevolence, in the satisfaction it receives, more than repays itself, and I am convinced he expects no other.'

'Very well, my dear,' cries Booth, 'you shall have it your way: I must confess I never yet saw any reason to blame your discernment; and perhaps I have been in the wrong to give myself so much uneasiness on this account.'

'Uneasiness! Child,' said Amelia eagerly. 'Good heavens! hath this made you uneasy?'

'I do own it hath,' answered Booth, 'and it hath been the only cause of breaking my repose.'

'Why then I wish,' cries Amelia, 'all the things had been at the devil, before ever the children had seen them; and whatever I may think myself, I promise

‘ promise you, they shall never more accept the value
‘ of a farthing—If upon this occasion, I have been the
‘ cause of your uneasiness, you will do me the justice
‘ to believe that I was totally innocent.’

At those words Booth caught her in his arms, and with the tenderest embrace, emphatically repeating the word innocent, cried—‘ Heaven forbid I should
‘ think otherwise. O thou art the best of creatures
‘ that ever blessed a man.’

Well but, said she smiling—Do confess, my dear, the truth; I promise you, ‘ I won’t blame you nor
‘ disesteem you for it; but is not pride really at the
‘ bottom of this fear of an obligation?’

‘ Perhaps it may,’ answered he, ‘ or if you will,
‘ you may call it fear. I own I am afraid of obligations as the worst kind of debts; for I have generally observed those who confer them, expect to be
‘ repaid ten thousand fold.’

Here ended all that is material of their discourse; and a little time afterwards, they both fell fast asleep in one another’s arms; from which time Booth had no more restlessness, nor any further perturbation in his dreams.

Their repose however had been so much disturbed in the former part of the night, that as it was very late before they enjoyed that sweet sleep I have just mentioned, they lay a-bed the next day till noon, when they both rose with the utmost cheerfulness; and while Amelia bestired herself in the affairs of her family, Booth went to visit the wounded colonel.

He found that gentleman still proceeding very fast in his recovery, with which he was more pleased than he had reason to be with his reception; for the colonel received him very coldly indeed, and when Booth told him he had received perfect satisfaction from his brother, Bath erected his head, and answered with a sneer, Very well, Sir, if you think these matters can
‘ be so made up, d—n me, if it is any business of
‘ mine. My dignity hath not been injured.’

‘ No one, I believe,’ cries Booth, ‘ dare injure it.’

‘ You believe so?’ said the colonel, ‘ I think, Sir,
‘ you might be assured of it; but this, at least, you
‘ may

may be assured of, that if any man did, I would tumble him down the precipice of hell, d—n me, that you may be assured of.’

As Booth found the colonel in this disposition, he had no great inclination to lengthen out his visit, nor did the colonel himself seem to desire it; so he soon returned back to his Amelia, whom he found performing the office of a cook, with as much pleasure as a fine lady generally enjoys in dressing herself out for a ball.

C H A P. III.

In which the History looks a little backwards.

BEFORE we proceed farther in our history, we shall recount a short scene to our reader which passed between Amelia and Mrs. Ellison whilst Booth was on his visit to colonel Bath. We have already observed, that Amelia had conceived an extraordinary affection for Mrs. Bennet, which still increased every time she saw her; she thought she discovered something wonderfully good and gentle in her countenance and disposition, and was very desirous of knowing her whole history.

She had a very short interview with that lady this morning in Mrs. Ellison’s apartment. As soon therefore as Mrs. Bennet was gone, Amelia acquainted Mrs. Ellison with the good opinion she had conceived of her friend, and likewise with her curiosity to know her story: ‘For there must be something uncommonly good,’ said she, in one who can so truly mourn for a husband above three years after his death.’

‘O,’ cries Mrs. Ellison, ‘to be sure the world must allow her to have been one of the best of wives. And indeed, upon the whole she is a good sort of woman; and what I like her the best for is a strong resemblance that she bears to yourself in the form of her person, and still more in her voice. But for my own part, I know nothing remarkable in her fortune, unless what I have told you, that she was the daughter of a clergyman, had little or no fortune, and married a poor parson for love, who left her

I

‘ her in the utmost distress. If you please, I will shew
‘ you a letter which she writ to me at that time,
‘ though I insist upon your promise never to mention
‘ it to her; indeed, you will be the first person I ever
‘ shewed it to.’ She then opened her scrutore, and
taking out the letter delivered it to Amelia, saying,
‘ There, madam, is, I believe, as fine a picture of
‘ distress as can well be drawn.’

‘ Dear Madam,

‘ As I have no other friend on earth but yourself,
‘ I hope you will pardon my writing to you at this
‘ season; though I do not know that you can relieve
‘ my distresses, or if you can, have I any pretence to
‘ expect that you should. My poor dear, O Heavens!
‘ —my—lies dead in the house, and after I had
‘ procured sufficient to bury him, a set of ruffians
‘ have entered my house, seized all I have, have seiz-
‘ ed his dear, dear corpse, and threaten to deny it
‘ burial. For Heaven’s sake, send me, at least, some
‘ advice; little Tommy stands now by me crying for
‘ bread, which I have not to give him.—I can say no
‘ more than that I am, Your most distressed humble
‘ servant,

‘ M. BENNET.’

Amelia read the letter over twice, and then returning it, with tears in her eyes, asked how the poor creature could possibly get through such distress.

‘ You may depend upon it, madam,’ said Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ the moment I read this account, I posted
‘ away immediately to the lady. As to the seizing
‘ the body, that I found was a mere bugbear; but
‘ all the rest was literally true. I sent immediately
‘ for the same gentleman, that I recommended to Mr.
‘ Booth, left the care of burying the corpse to him,
‘ and brought my friend and her little boy immediately
‘ away to my own house, where she remained
‘ some months in the most miserable condition. I
‘ then prevailed with her to retire into the country,
‘ and procured her a lodging with a friend at St. Edmundsbury, the air and gaiety of which place by
‘ degrees recovered her; and she returned in about a
twelve-

‘twelvemonth to town, as well, I think, as she is at present.’

‘I am almost afraid to ask,’ cries Amelia; ‘and yet I long methinks to know what is become of the poor little boy.’

‘He hath been dead,’ said Mrs. Ellifon, ‘a little more than half a year; and the mother lamented him at first almost as much as she did her husband; but I found it indeed rather an easier matter to comfort her, though I sat up with her near a fortnight upon the latter occasion.’

‘You are a good creature,’ said Amelia, ‘and I love you dearly.’

‘Alas! madam,’ cries she, ‘what could I have done, if it had not been for the goodness of that best of men, my noble cousin! His lordship no sooner heard of the widow’s distress from me, than he immediately settled one hundred and fifty pounds a year upon her during her life.’

‘Well! how noble, how generous was that!’ said Amelia. ‘I declare I begin to love your cousin, Mrs. Ellifon.’

‘And I declare if you do,’ answered she, ‘there is no love lost, I verily believe; if you had heard what I heard him say yesterday behind your back.—

‘Why, what did he say, Mrs. Ellifon?’ cries Amelia.

‘He said,’ answered the other, ‘that you was the finest woman his eyes ever beheld.—Ah! it is in vain to wish, and yet I cannot help wishing too.—O Mrs. Booth! if you had been a single woman, I firmly believe I could have made you the happiest in the world. And I sincerely think, I never saw a woman who deserved it more.’

‘I am obliged to you, madam,’ cries Amelia, ‘for your good opinion; but I really look on myself already as the happiest woman in the world. Our circumstances, it is true, might have been a little more fortunate; but, O my dear Mrs. Ellifon, what fortune can be put in the balance with such a husband as mine?’

‘I am

‘ I am afraid, dear madam,’ answered Mrs. Ellison, ‘ you would not hold the scale fairly.—I acknowledge indeed, Mr. Booth is a very pretty gentleman ; Heaven forbid I should endeavour to lessen him in your opinion ; yet, if I was to be brought to confession, I could not help saying, I see where the superiority lies, and that the men have more reason to envy Mr. Booth, than the women have to envy his lady.’

‘ Nay, I will not bear this,’ replied Amelia. ‘ You will forfeit all my love, if you have the least disrespectful opinion of my husband.—You do not know him, Mrs. Ellison, he is the best, the kindest, the worthiest of all his sex. I have observed indeed once or twice before that you have taken some dislike to him. I cannot conceive for what reason. If he hath said or done any thing to disoblige you, I am sure I can justly acquit him of design. His extreme vivacity makes him sometimes a little too heedless ; but, I am convinced, a more innocent heart, or one more void of offence, was never in a human bosom.’

‘ Nay, if you grow serious,’ cries Mrs. Ellison, ‘ I have done. How is it possible you should suspect I had taken any dislike to a man, to whom I have always shewn so perfect a regard ! but to say I think him, or almost any other man in the world, worthy of yourself, is not within my power with truth. And since you force the confession from me, I declare, I think such beauty, such sense, and such goodness united, might aspire without vanity to the arms of any monarch in Europe.’

‘ Alas ! my dear Mrs. Ellison,’ answered Amelia, ‘ do you think happiness and a crown so closely united ? how many miserable women have lain in the arms of kings ?—Indeed, Mrs. Ellison, if I had all the merit you compliment me with, I should think it all fully rewarded with such a man as, I thank Heaven, hath fallen to my lot ; nor would I, upon my soul, exchange that lot with any queen in the universe.’

‘ Well,

‘ Well, there are enow of our sex,’ said Mrs. Ellison, ‘ to keep you in countenance ; but I shall never forget the beginning of a song of Mr. Congreve’s, that my husband was so fond of, that he was always singing it.’

Love’s but a frailty of the mind,
When ’tis not with ambition join’d.

‘ Love without interest makes but an unfavory dish in my opinion.’

‘ And pray how long hath this been your opinion ?’ said Amelia, smiling.

‘ Ever since I was born,’ answered Mrs. Ellison, ‘ at least, ever since I can remember.’

‘ And have you never,’ said Amelia, ‘ deviated from this generous way of thinking ?’

‘ Never once,’ answered the other, ‘ in the whole course of my life.’

‘ O Mrs. Ellison ! Mrs. Ellison !’ cries Amelia, ‘ why do we ever blame those who are disingenuous in confessing their faults, when we are so often ashamed to own ourselves in the right. Some women now, in my situation, would be angry that you had not made confidantes of them ; but I never desire to know more of the secrets of others, than they are pleased to entrust me with. You must believe, however, that I should not have given you these hints of my knowing all, if I had disapproved of your choice. On the contrary, I assure you, I highly approve it. The gentility he wants, it will be easy in your power to procure for him ; and as for his good qualities, I will myself be bound for them : and I make not the least doubt, as you have owned to me yourself, that you have placed your affections on him, you will be one of the happiest women in the world.’

‘ Upon my honour,’ cries Mrs. Ellison, very gravely, ‘ I do not understand one word of what you mean.’

‘ Upon my honour, you astonish me,’ said Amelia, ‘ but I have done.’

‘ Nay then,’ said the other, ‘ I insist upon knowing what you mean.’

‘ Why,

‘ Why, what can I mean,’ answered Amelia, ‘ but your marriage with Serjeant Atkinson?’

‘ With Serjeant Atkinson!’ cries Mrs. Ellifon eagerly, ‘ my marriage with a serjeant!’

‘ Well, with Mr. Atkinson then, Captain Atkinson, if you please; for so I hope to see him.’

‘ And have you really no better opinion of me,’ said Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ than to imagine me capable of such condescension? what have I done, dear Mrs. Booth, to deserve so low a place in your esteem? I find, indeed, as Solomon says, *Women ought to watch the door of their lips*. How little did I imagine that a little harmless freedom in discourse, could persuade any one that I could entertain a serious intention of disgracing my family! for of a very good family am I come, I assure you, madam, though I now let lodgings. Few of my lodgers, I believe, ever came of a better.’

‘ If I have offended you, madam,’ said Amelia, ‘ I am very sorry, and ask your pardon; but besides what I heard from yourself, Mr. Booth told me.’

‘ O yes,’ answered Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ Mr. Booth, I know, is a very good friend of mine.—Indeed, I know you better than to think it could be your own suspicion.—I am very much obliged to Mr. Booth truly.’

‘ Nay,’ cries Amelia, ‘ the serjeant himself is in fault; for Mr. Booth, I am positive, only repeated what he had from him.’

‘ Impudent coxcomb!’ cries Mrs. Ellifon. ‘ I shall know how to keep such fellows at a proper distance for the future—I will tell you, dear madam, all that happened. When I rose in the morning, I found the fellow waiting in the entry; and as you had expressed some regard for him as your foster-brother, nay, he is a very genteel fellow that I must own, I scolded my maid for not shewing him into my little back-room; and I then asked him to walk into the parlour. Could I have imagined he would have contrived such little civility into an encouragement.’

‘ Nay, I will have justice done to my poor brother
‘ too,’

‘ too,’ said Amelia. ‘ I myself have seen you give him much greater encouragement than that.’

‘ Well, perhaps I have,’ said Mrs. Ellifon. ‘ I have been always too unguarded in my speech, and cannot answer for all I have said.’ She then began to change her note, and with an affected laugh, turned all into ridicule ; and soon afterwards, the two ladies separated, both in apparent good-humour ; and Amelia went about those domestic offices, in which Mr. Booth found her engaged at the end of the preceding chapter.

C H A P. IV.

Containing a very extraordinary incident.

IN the afternoon, Mr. Booth, with Amelia and her children, went to refresh themselves in the Park. The conversation now turned on what past in the morning with Mrs. Ellifon, the latter part of the dialogue, I mean, recorded in the last chapter. Amelia told her husband, that Mrs. Ellifon so strongly denied all intentions to marry the serjeant, that she had convinced her the poor fellow was under an error, and had mistaken a little too much levity for serious encouragement ; and concluded, by desiring Booth not to jest with her any more on that subject.

Booth burst into a laugh, at what his wife said. ‘ My dear creature,’ said he, ‘ how easy is thy honesty and simplicity to be imposed on ! how little dost thou guess at the art and falsehood of women ! I knew a young lady, who, against her father’s consent, was married to a brother officer of mine. And as I often used to walk with her, (for I knew her father intimately well) she would of her own accord take frequent occasions to ridicule and vilify her husband (for so he was at the time) and express great wonder and indignation at the report which she allowed to prevail, that she should condescend ever to look at such a fellow, with any other design than of laughing at, and despising him. The marriage afterwards became publicly owned, and the lady was reputedly brought to bed. Since which, I have often
‘ seen

‘ seen her ; nor hath she ever appeared to be in the
‘ least ashamed of what she had formerly said, though,
‘ indeed, I believe she hates me heartily for having
‘ heard it.’

‘ But for what reason,’ cries Amelia, ‘ should she
‘ deny a fact, when she must be so certain of our dis-
‘ covering it, and that immediately ?’

‘ I cannot answer what end she may propose,’ said Booth. ‘ Sometimes one would be almost persuaded
‘ that there was a pleasure in lying itself. But this I
‘ am certain, that I would believe the honest serjeant
‘ on his bare word, sooner than I would fifty Mrs.
‘ Ellifons on oath. I am convinced he would not
‘ have said what he did to me, without the strongest
‘ encouragement ; and, I think, after what we have
‘ been both witnesses to, it requires no great confi-
‘ dence in his veracity, to give him an unlimited cre-
‘ dit with regard to the lady’s behaviour.’

To this, Amelia made no reply ; and they discoursed
of other matters during the remainder of a very plea-
sant walk.

When they returned home, Amelia was surprised to
find an appearance of disorder in her apartment. Se-
veral of the trinkets, which his lordship had given the
children, lay about the room ; and a suit of her own
cloaths which she had left in her drawers, was now dis-
played upon the bed.

She immediately summoned her little girl up stairs,
who, as she plainly perceived the moment she came up
with a candle, had half cried her eyes out : for though
the girl had opened the door to them, as it was al-
most dark, she had not taken any notice of this phæ-
nomenon in her countenance.

The girl now fell down upon her knees, and cried,
—‘ For Heaven’s sake, madam, do not be angry with
‘ me. Indeed, I was left alone in the house ; and
‘ hearing somebody knock at the door, I opened it,
‘ I am sure thinking no harm. I did not know but
‘ it might have been you, or my master, or madam
‘ Ellifon ; and immediately as I did, the rogue burst
‘ in and ran directly up stairs, and what he hath rob-
‘ bed you of I cannot tell ; but I am sure I could not
‘ help

‘ help it : for he was a great fwinging man, with a
‘ piftol in each hand ; and, if I had dared to call
‘ out, to be fure he would have killed me. I am fure
‘ I was never in fuch a fright in my born days, where-
‘ of I am hardly come to myfelf yet. I believe he is
‘ fomewhere about the houfe yet ; for I never faw him
‘ go out.’

Amelia difcovered fome little alarm at this narrative, but much lefs than many other ladies would have fhewn : for a fright is, I believe, fome time laid hold of as an opportunity of difclofing feveral charms peculiar to that occafion. And which, as Mr. Addifon fays of certain virtues,

— fhun the day, and lie concealed

In the fmooth feafons, and the calms of life.

Booth having opened the window, and fummoned in two chairmen to his affiftance, proceeded to fearch the houfe ; but all to no purpofe ; the thief was flown, though the poor girl in her ftate of terror, had not feen him efcape.

But now a circumftance appeared which greatly furprifed both Booth and Amelia ; indeed, I believe it will have the fame effect on the reader ; and this was, that the thief had taken nothing with him. He had indeed tumbled over all Booth’s and Amelia’s clothes, and the children’s toys, but had left all behind him.

Amelia was fcarce more pleafed than aftonifhed at this difcovery, and re-examined the girl, affuring her of an abfolute pardon, if fhe confefied the truth, but grievoufly threatening her if fhe was found guilty of the leaft falfhood. ‘ As for a thief, child,’ fays fhe, ‘ that is certainly not true ; you have had fomebody
‘ with you, to whom you have been fhewing the
‘ things ; therefore tell me plainly who it was.’

The girl protefted in the folemneft manner that fhe knew not the perfon ; but as to fome circumftances fhe began to vary a little from her firft account, particularly as to the piftols ; concerning which, being ftrictly examined by Booth, fhe at laft cried,—‘ To
‘ be fure, fir, he muft have had piftols about him.’ And inftead of perfifting in his having rufhed in upon
her,

her, she now confessed, that he had asked at the door for her master and mistress; and that at his desire she had shewn him up stairs, where he at first said he would stay till their return home; ‘but, indeed,’ cried she, ‘I thought no harm; for he looked like a gentleman-like sort of man. And, indeed, so I thought he was for a good while, whereof he sat down and behaved himself very civilly, till he saw some of master’s and miss’s things upon the chest of drawers; whereof he cried, ‘heyday! what’s here?’ and then he fell to tumbling about the things like any mad. Then I thinks, thinks I to myself, to be sure he is a highwayman, whereof I did not dare to speak to him: for I knew madam Ellifon and her maid was gone out, and what could such a poor girl as I do against a great strong man? and besides, thinks I, to be sure he hath got pistols about him, though I cannot indeed, (that I will not do for the world) take my Bible-Oath that I saw any; yet to be sure he would have soon pulled them out, and shot me dead, if I had ventured to have said any thing to offend him.’

‘I know not what to make of this,’ cries Booth. ‘The poor girl, I verily believe, speaks to the best of her knowledge. A thief it could not be; for he hath not taken the least thing; and it is plain he had the girl’s watch in his hand.—If it had been a bailiff, surely he would have staid till our return. I can conceive no other from the girl’s account, than that it must have been some madman.’—

‘O good sir,’ said the girl, ‘now you mention it, if he was not a thief, to be sure he must have been a madman; for indeed he looked, and behaved himself too, very much like a madman: for now I remember it, he talked to himself, and said many strange kind of words, that I did not understand. Indeed, he looked altogether as I have seen people in Bedlam; besides, if he was not a madman, what good could it do him to throw the things all about the room, in such a manner? and he said something too about my master, just before he went down stairs: I was in such a fright, I cannot remember particularly;

‘ larly ; but I am sure they were very ill words ; he
‘ said he would do for him, I am sure he said that,
‘ and other wicked bad words too, if I could but
‘ think of them.’

‘ Upon my word,’ said Booth, ‘ this is the most
‘ probable conjecture ; but still I am puzzled to con-
‘ ceive who it should be : for I have no madman to
‘ my knowledge of my acquaintance ; and it seems,
‘ as the girl says, he asked for me.’ He then turned
to the child, and asked her if she was certain of that
circumstance.

The poor maid, after a little hesitation, answered,
‘ Indeed, sir, I cannot be very positive ; for the fright
‘ he threw me into afterwards, drove every thing al-
‘ most out of my mind.’

‘ Well, whatever he was,’ cries Amelia, ‘ I am
‘ glad the consequence is no worse ; but let this be a
‘ warning to you, little Betty, and teach you to take
‘ more care for the future. If ever you should be
‘ left alone in the house again, be sure to let no per-
‘ sons in, without first looking out at the window,
‘ and seeing who they are. I promised not to chide
‘ you any more on this occasion, and I will keep my
‘ word ; but it is very plain you desired this person
‘ to walk up into our apartment, which was very
‘ wrong in our absence.’

Betty was going to answer—but Amelia would not
let her, saying, ‘ don’t attempt to excuse yourself ;
‘ for I mortally hate a liar, and can forgive any fault
‘ sooner than falsehood.’

The poor girl then submitted ; and now Amelia
with her assistance began to replace all things in their
order ; and little Emily hugging her watch with great
fondness, declared she would never part with it any
more.

Thus ended this odd adventure, not entirely to the
satisfaction of Booth : for, besides his curiosity, which,
when thoroughly roused, is a very troublesome passion,
he had, as is, I believe, usual with all persons in his
circumstances, several doubts and apprehensions of he
knew not what. Indeed, fear is never more uneasy,
than when it doth not certainly know its object : for

on such occasions the mind is ever employed in raising a thousand bugbears and fancies, much more dreadful than any realities, and like children, when they tell tales of hobgoblins, seems industrious in terrifying itself.

C H A P. V.

Containing some matters not very unnatural.

MATTERS were scarce sooner reduced into order and decency, than a violent knocking was heard at the door, such indeed as would have persuaded any one not accustomed to the sound, that the madman was returned in the highest spring-tide of his fury.

Instead, however, of so disagreeable an appearance, a very fine lady presently came into the room, no other indeed than Mrs. James herself; for she was resolved to shew Amelia by the speedy return of her visit, how unjust all her accusations had been of any failure in the duties of friendship; she had moreover another reason to accelerate this visit, and that was, to congratulate her friend on the event of the duel between Colonel Bath and Mr. Booth.

The lady had so well profited by Mrs. Booth's remonstrance, that she had now no more of that stiffness and formality which she had worn on a former occasion. On the contrary, she now behaved with the utmost freedom and good-humour, and made herself so very agreeable, that Amelia was highly pleased and delighted with her company.

An incident happened during this visit, that may appear to some too inconsiderable in itself to be recorded; and yet, as it certainly produced a very strong consequence in the mind of Mr. Booth, we cannot prevail on ourselves to pass it by.

Little Emily, who was present in the room while Mrs. James was there, as she stood near that lady, happened to be playing with her watch, which she was so greatly overjoyed had escaped safe from the madman. Mrs. James, who express great fondness for the child, desired to see the watch, which she commended as the prettiest of the kind she had ever seen.

Amelia

Amelia caught eager hold of this opportunity to spread the praises of her benefactor. She presently acquainted Mrs. James with the donor's name, and ran on with great encomiums on his lordship's goodness, and particularly on his generosity. To which Mrs. James answered, 'O certainly, madam, his lordship hath universally the character of being extremely generous—where he likes.'

In uttering these words, she laid a very strong emphasis on the three last monosyllables, accompanying them at the same time with a very sagacious look, a very significant leer, and a great flirt with her fan.

The greatest genius the world hath ever produced, observes in one of his most excellent plays, that

— Trifles light as air

Are to the jealous confirmations strong

As proofs of holy writ.

That Mr. Booth began to be possessed by this worst of fiends admits, I think, no longer doubt; for at this speech of Mrs. James, he immediately turned pale, and from a high degree of cheerfulness, was all on a sudden struck dumb, so that he spoke not another word till Mrs. James left the room.

The moment that lady drove from the door, Mrs. Ellison came up stairs. She entered the room with a laugh, and very plentifully rallied both Booth and Amelia concerning the madman, of which she had received a full account below stairs; and at last asked Amelia, if she could not guess who it was; but, without receiving an answer, went on, saying, 'for my own part, I fancy it must be some lover of yours; some person that hath seen you, and so is run mad with love. Indeed, I should not wonder if all mankind were to do the same. La! Mr. Booth, what makes you grave? why you are as melancholy as if you had been robbed in earnest. Upon my word, though to be serious, it is a strange story; and as the girl tells it, I know not what to make of it. Perhaps it might be some rogue that intended to rob the house, and his heart failed him; yet, even that would be very extraordinary. What, did you lose nothing, madam?'

‘ Nothing at all,’ answered Amelia. ‘ He did not even take the child’s watch.’

Well, captain,’ cries Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ I hope you will take more care of the house to-morrow; for your lady and I shall leave you alone to the care of it. Here, madam,’ said she, ‘ here is a present from my lord to us; here are two tickets for the masquerade at Ranelagh. You will be so charmed with it. It is the sweetest of all diversions.’

‘ May I be damned, madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ if my wife shall go thither.’

Mrs. Ellifon stared at these words, and, indeed, so did Amelia: for they were spoke with great vehemence. At length the former cried out with an air of astonishment, ‘ Not let your lady go to Ranelagh, sir?’

‘ No, madam,’ cries Booth, ‘ I will not let my wife go to Ranelagh.’

‘ You surprise me,’ cries Mrs. Ellifon. ‘ Sure you are not in earnest.’

‘ Indeed, madam,’ returned he, ‘ I am seriously in earnest. And what is more, I am convinced she would of her own accord refuse to go.’

‘ Now, madam,’ said Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ you are to answer for yourself; and I will for your husband, that, if you have a desire to go, he will not refuse you.’

‘ I hope, madam,’ answered Amelia with great gravity, ‘ I shall never desire to go to any place contrary to Mr. Booth’s inclinations.’

‘ Did ever mortal hear the like?’ said Mrs. Ellifon: ‘ you are enough to spoil the best husband in the universe. Inclinations! what, is a woman to be governed then by her husband’s inclinations, though they are never so unreasonable?’

‘ Pardon me, madam,’ said Amelia, ‘ I will not suppose Mr. Booth’s inclinations ever can be unreasonable. I am very much obliged to you for the offer you have made me; but I beg you will not mention it more: for, after what Mr. Booth hath declared, if Ranelagh was a Heaven upon earth, I would refuse to go to it.’

‘ I thank you, my dear,’ cries Booth, ‘ I do assure you

‘ you, you oblige me beyond my power of expression
‘ by what you say ; but I will endeavour to shew you
‘ both my sensibility of such goodness, and my lasting
‘ gratitude to it.’

‘ And pray, sir,’ cries Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ what can be
‘ your objection to your lady’s going to a place, which
‘ I will venture to say is as reputable as any about
‘ town, and which is frequented by the best company ?’

‘ Pardon me, good Mrs. Ellifon,’ said Booth.
‘ As my wife is so good to acquiesce without knowing
‘ my reasons, I am not, I think, obliged to assign
‘ them to any other person.

‘ Well,’ cries Mrs. Ellifon, ‘ if I had been told
‘ this, I would not have believed it. What, refuse
‘ your lady an innocent diversion, and that too when
‘ you have not the pretence to say it would cost you a
‘ farthing ?’

‘ Why will you say any more on this subject, dear
‘ madam ?’ cries Amelia. ‘ All diversions are to me
‘ matters of such indifference, that the bare inclina-
‘ tions of any one for whom I have the least value,
‘ would at all times turn the balance of mine. I am
‘ sure then after what Mr. Booth hath said’——

‘ My dear,’ cries he, taking her up hastily, ‘ I sin-
‘ cerely ask your pardon, I spoke inadvertently, and
‘ in a passion—I never once thought of controuling
‘ you—nor ever would.—Nay, I said in the same
‘ breath you would not go ; and upon my honour
‘ I meant nothing more.’

‘ My dear,’ said she, ‘ you have no need of mak-
‘ ing any apology. I am not in the least offended,
‘ and am convinced you will never deny me what I
‘ shall desire.’

‘ Try him, try him, madam,’ cries Mrs. Ellifon ;
‘ I will be judged by all the women in town, if it is
‘ possible for a wife to ask her husband any thing more
‘ reasonable. You cannot conceive what a sweet,
‘ charming, elegant, delicious place it is.—Paradise
‘ itself can hardly be equal to it.’

‘ I beg you will excuse me, madam,’ said Amelia,
‘ nay, I intreat you will ask me no more : for be as-
‘ sured I must and will refuse—Do let me desire you

‘to give the ticket to poor Mrs. Bennet. I believe it
‘would greatly oblige her.’——

‘Pardon me, madam,’ said Mrs. Ellifon. ‘If you
‘will not accept of it, I am not so distressed for want
‘of company as to go to such a public place with
‘all sort of people neither. I am always very glad
‘to see Mrs. Bennet at my own house; because I
‘look upon her as a very good sort of woman;
‘but I don’t chuse to be seen with such people in
‘public places.’

Amelia exprest some little indignation at this last
speech, which she declared to be entirely beyond her
comprehension; and soon after Mrs. Ellifon, finding
all her efforts to prevail on Amelia were ineffectual,
took her leave, giving Mr. Booth two or three sar-
castical words, and a much more sarcastical look at
her departure.

C H A P. VI.

*A scene, in which some ladies will possibly think Amelia’s
conduct exceptionable.*

BOOTH and his wife being left alone, a solemn
silence prevailed during a few minutes. At last
Amelia, who though a good, was yet a human crea-
ture, said to her husband, ‘Pray, my dear, do in-
‘form me, what could put you into so great a passion
‘when Mrs. Ellifon first offered me the tickets for this
‘masquerade?’

‘I had rather you would not ask me,’ said Booth.
‘You have obliged me greatly in your ready ac-
‘quiescence with my desire, and you will add great-
‘ly to the obligation by not enquiring the reason
‘of it. This you may depend upon, Amelia, that
‘your good and happiness are the great objects of all
‘my wishes, and the end I propose in all my actions.
‘This view, no one could tempt me to refuse you any
‘thing, or to conceal any thing from you.’

‘I will appeal to yourself,’ answered she, ‘whether
‘this be not using me too much like a child, and
‘whether I can possibly help being a little offended
‘at it.’

‘Not

‘ Not in the least,’ replied he. ‘ I use you only with the tenderness of a friend. I would only endeavour to conceal that from you, which I think would give you uneasiness if you knew. These are called the pious frauds of friendship.’

‘ I detest all fraud,’ says she; ‘ and pious is too good an epithet to be joined to so odious a word. You have often, you know, tried these frauds with no better effect than to teize and torment me. You cannot imagine, my dear, but that I must have a violent desire to know the reason of words, which, I own, I never expected to have heard. And the more you have shewn a reluctance to tell me, the more eagerly I have longed to know. Nor can this be called a vain curiosity; since I seem so much interested in this affair. If after all this, you still insist on keeping the secret, I will convince you, I am not ignorant of the duty of a wife, by my obedience; but I cannot help telling you at the same time, you will make me one of the most miserable of women.’

‘ That is,’ cries he, ‘ in other words, my dear Emily, to say, I will be contented without the secret; but I am resolved to know it nevertheless.’

‘ Nay, if you say so,’ cries she, ‘ I am convinced you will tell me—Positively, dear Billy, I must and will know.’

‘ Why then positively,’ says Booth, ‘ I will tell you. And I think I shall then shew you, that however well you may know the duty of a wife, I am not always able to behave like a husband. In a word then, my dear, the secret is no more than this; I am unwilling you should receive any more presents from my lord.’

‘ Mercy upon me!’ cries she, with all the marks of astonishment—‘ what a masquerade ticket.’——

‘ Yes, my dear, cries he, ‘ that is perhaps the very worst and most dangerous of all. Few men make presents of those tickets to ladies, without intending to meet them at the place. And what do we know of your companion? To be sincere with you, I have not liked her behaviour for some time.

‘ What might be the consequence of going with such a woman to such a place, to meet such a person, I tremble to think—And now, my dear, I have told you my reason of refusing her offer with some little vehemence, and I think, I need explain myself no farther.’

‘ You need not indeed, sir; answered she. Good Heavens! did I ever expect to hear this! I can appeal to Heaven, nay, I will appeal to yourself, Mr. Booth, if I have ever done any thing to deserve such a suspicion. If ever any action of mine, nay, if ever any thought had stained the innocence of my soul, I could be contented.’

‘ How cruelly do you mistake me,’ said Booth—‘ what suspicion have I ever shewn?’

‘ Can you ask it,’ answered she, ‘ after what you have just now declared?’

‘ If I have declared any suspicion of you,’ replied he, ‘ or if I ever entertained a thought leading that way, may the worst of evils that ever afflicted human nature attend me. I know the pure innocence of that tender bosom, I do know it, my lovely angel, and adore it. The snares which might be laid for that innocence, were alone the cause of my apprehension. I feared what a wicked and voluptuous man, resolved to sacrifice every thing to the gratification of a sensual appetite with the most delicious repast, might attempt. If ever I injured the unspotted whiteness of thy virtue in my imagination, may hell—

‘ Do not terrify me,’ cries she interrupting him, ‘ with such imprecations. O Mr. Booth, Mr. Booth, you must well know that a woman’s virtue is always her sufficient guard. No husband without suspecting that can suspect any danger from those snares you mention—And why, if you are liable to take such things into your head, may not your suspicions fall on me, as well as on any other? for sure nothing was ever more unjust, I will not say ungrateful, than the suspicions which you have bestowed on his lordship. I do solemnly declare, in all the times I have seen the poor man, he hath never once offered
‘ the.

‘ the least forwardness. His behaviour hath been polite indeed, but rather remarkably distant than otherwise. Particularly when we played at cards together. I don’t remember he spoke ten words to me all the evening ; and when I was at his house, though he shewed the greatest fondness imaginable to the children, he took so little notice of me, that a vain woman would have been very little pleased with him. And if he gave them many presents, he never offered me one. The first indeed which he ever offered me was that, which you in that kind manner forced me to refuse.’

‘ All this may be only the effect of art,’ said Booth. ‘ I am convinced he doth, nay, I am convinced he must like you ; and my good friend James, who perfectly well knows the world, told me, that his lordship’s character was that of the most profuse in his pleasures with women ; nay, what said Mrs. James this very evening, “ his lordship is extremely generous—where he likes.”’

‘ I shall never forget the sneer with which she spoke those last words.’

‘ I am convinced they injure him,’ cries Amelia. ‘ As for Mrs. James, she was always given to be censorious, I remarked it in her long ago, as her greatest fault. And for the colonel, I believe, he may find faults enow of this kind in his own bosom, without searching after them among his neighbours. I am sure he hath the most impudent look of all the men I know ; and I solemnly declare, the very last time he was here, he put me out of countenance more than once.’

‘ Colonel James,’ answered Booth, ‘ may have his faults very probably. I do not look upon him as a saint, nor do I believe he desires I should ; but what interest could he have in abusing this lord’s character to me ? or why should I question his truth, when he assured me that my lord had never done an act of beneficence in his life, but for the sake of some woman whom he lusted after ?’

‘ Then I myself can confute him,’ replied Amelia : ‘ for besides his services to you, which, for the future,

‘ I shall wish to forget, and his kindness to my little
‘ babes, how inconsistent is the character which James
‘ gives of him, with his lordship’s behaviour to his
‘ own nephew and niece, whose extreme fondness of
‘ their uncle sufficiently proclaims his goodness to
‘ them?—I need not mention all that I have heard
‘ from Mrs. Ellison, every word of which I believe :
‘ for I have great reason to think, notwithstanding
‘ some little levity, which, to give her her due, she
‘ sees and condemns in herself, she is a very good sort
‘ of woman.’

‘ Well, my dear,’ cries Booth, ‘ I may have been
‘ deceived, and I heartily hope I am so ; but in cases
‘ of this nature it is always good to be on the surest
‘ side : for, as Congreve says,

‘ The wise too jealous are : Fools too secure.’

Here Amelia burst into tears, upon which, Booth immediately caught her in his arms, and endeavoured to comfort her.—Passion however for a while obstructed her speech, and at last she cried,—‘ O Mr. Booth, can
‘ I bear to hear the word jealousy from your mouth ?’

‘ Why, my love,’ said Booth, ‘ will you so fatally
‘ misunderstand my meaning ? how often shall I pro-
‘ test that it is not of you, but of him that I was
‘ jealous. If you could look into my breast, and
‘ there read all the most secret thoughts of my heart,
‘ you would not see one faint idea to your disho-
‘ nour.’

‘ I don’t misunderstand you, my dear,’ said she,
‘ so much as I am afraid you misunderstand your-
‘ self. What is it you fear?—you mention not force,
‘ but snares. Is not this to confess at least, that you
‘ have some doubt of my understanding ? do you then
‘ really imagine me so weak as to be cheated of my
‘ virtue ? am I to be deceived into an affection for a
‘ man, before I perceive the least inward hint of my
‘ danger ? no, Mr. Booth, believe me a woman must
‘ be a fool indeed, who can have in earnest such an
‘ excuse for her actions. I have not, I think, any
‘ very high opinion of my judgment : but so far I
‘ shall rely upon it, that no man breathing could
‘ have

‘ have any such designs as you have apprehended, without my immediately seeing them ; and how I should then act, I hope my whole conduct to you hath sufficiently declared.’

‘ Well, my dear,’ cries Booth, ‘ I beg you will mention it no more, if possible forget it. I hope, nay, I believe, I have been in the wrong, pray forgive me.’

‘ I will, I do forgive you, my dear,’ said she, if forgiveness be a proper word for one whom you have rather made miserable than angry ; but let me entreat you to banish for ever all such suspicions from your mind. I hope Mrs. Ellison hath not discovered the real cause of your passion ; but poor woman, if she had, I am convinced it would go no farther. Oh Heavens ! I would not for the world it should reach his lordship’s ears. You would lose the best friend that ever man had. Nay, I would not for his own sake, poor man ! for I really believe it would affect him greatly, and I must, I cannot help having an esteem for so much goodness. An esteem which by this dear hand,’ said she, taking Booth’s hand and kissing it, ‘ no man alive shall ever obtain by making love to me.’

Booth caught her in his arms and tenderly embraced her. After which the reconciliation soon became complete ; and Booth in the contemplation of his happiness entirely buried all his jealous thoughts.

C H A P. VII.

A Chapter in which there is much Learning.

THE next morning whilst Booth was gone to take his morning-walk, Amelia went down into Mrs. Ellison’s apartment, where though she was received with great civility, yet she found that lady was not at all pleased with Mr. Booth ; and by some hints which dropt from her in conversation, Amelia very greatly apprehended that Mrs. Ellison had too much suspicion of her husband’s real uneasiness. For that lady declared very openly, she could not help perceiving what sort of man Mr. Booth was ; ‘ and though I have the greatest regard for you, madam,

‘in the world,’ said she, ‘yet I think myself in honour obliged not to impose on his lordship, who, I know very well, hath conceived his greatest liking to the captain on my telling him that he was the best husband in the world.’

Amelia’s fears gave her much disturbance, and when her husband returned, she acquainted him with them; upon which occasion, as it was natural, she resumed a little the topic of their former discourse, nor could she help casting, though in very gentle terms, some slight blame on Booth, for having entertained a suspicion, which, she said, might in its consequence very possibly prove their ruin, and occasion the loss of his lordship’s friendship.

Booth became highly affected with what his wife said, and the more as he had just received a note from Colonel James, informing him that the colonel had heard of a vacant company in the regiment which Booth had mentioned to him, and that he had been with his lordship about it, who had promised to use his utmost interest to obtain him the command.

The poor man now expressed the utmost concern for his yesterday’s behaviour, said, ‘he believed the devil had taken possession of him,’ and concluded with crying out, ‘sure I was born, my dearest creature, to be your torment.’

Amelia no sooner saw her husband’s distress, than she instantly forebore whatever might seem likely to aggravate it, and applied herself, with all her power, to comfort him. ‘If you will give me leave to offer my advice, my dearest soul,’ said she, ‘I think all might yet be remedied. I think you know me too well, to suspect that the desire of diversion should induce me to mention, what I am now going to propose. And in that confidence, I will ask you to let me accept my lord’s and Mrs. Ellifon’s offer, and go to the masquerade. No matter how little while I stay there: if you desire it, I will not be an hour from you. I can make an hundred excuses to come home, or tell a real truth, and say I am tired with the place. The bare going will cure every thing.’

Amelia.

Amelia had no sooner done speaking, than Booth immediately approved her advice, and readily gave his consent. He could not however help saying, 'that the shorter her stay was there, the more agreeable it would be to him : for you know, my dear,' said he, 'I would never willingly be a moment out of your sight.'

In the afternoon Amelia sent to invite Mrs. Ellison to a dish of tea ; and Booth undertook to laugh off all that had past yesterday, in which attempt, the abundant good humour of that lady gave him great hopes of success.

Mrs. Bennet came that afternoon to make a visit, and was almost an hour with Booth and Amelia, before the entry of Mrs. Ellison.

Mr. Booth had hitherto rather disliked this young lady, and had wondered at the pleasure which Amelia declared she took in her company. This afternoon, however, he changed his opinion, and liked her almost as much as his wife had done. She did indeed behave at this time with more than ordinary gaiety ; and good humour gave a glow to her countenance that set off her features, which were very pretty, to the best advantage, and lessened the deadness that had usually appeared in her complexion.

But if Booth was now pleased with Mrs. Bennet, Amelia was still more pleased with her than ever. For when their discourse turned on love, Amelia discovered that her new friend had all the same sentiments on that subject with herself. In the course of their conversation, Booth gave Mrs. Bennet a hint of wishing her a good husband, upon which, both the ladies declaimed against second marriages, with equal vehemence.

Upon this occasion, Booth and his wife discovered a talent in their visitant, to which they had been before entirely strangers, and for which they both greatly admired her ; and this was, that the lady was a good scholar, in which indeed she had the advantage of poor Amelia, whose reading was confined to English plays, and poetry ; besides which, I think, she had conversed only with the divinity of the great
and

and learned Dr. Barrow, and with the histories of the excellent bishop Burnet.

Amelia delivered herself on the subject of second marriages with much eloquence and great good sense; but when Mrs. Bennet came to give her opinion, she spoke in the following manner, 'I shall not enter into the question concerning the legality of bigamy. Our laws certainly allow it, and so, I think, doth our religion. We are now debating only on the decency of it, and in this light, I own myself as strenuous an advocate against it, as any Roman matron would have been in those ages of the commonwealth, when it was held to be infamous. For my own part, how great a paradox soever my opinion may seem, I solemnly declare, I see but little difference between having two husbands at one time, and at several times; and of this I am very confident, that the same degree of love for a first husband, which preserves a woman in the one case, will preserve her in the other. There is one argument, which I scarce know how to deliver before you, Sir; but—if a woman hath lived with her first husband without having children, I think it unpardonable in her to carry barrenness into a second family. On the contrary, if she hath children by her first husband, to give them a second father is still more unpardonable.'

'But suppose, madam,' cries Booth, interrupting her, with a smile, 'she should have had children by her first husband, and have lost them.'

'That is a case,' answered she, with a sigh, 'which I did not desire to think of, and, I must own it, the most favourable light in which a second marriage can be seen. But the scriptures, as Petrarch observes, rather suffer them than commend them; and St. Jerom speaks against them with the utmost bitterness.' 'I remember,' cries Booth, (who was willing either to shew his learning, or to draw out the lady's,) a very wise law of Charondas the famous lawgiver of Thurium, by which men, who married a second time, were removed from all public councils: for it was scarce reasonable to suppose,

‘ pose, that he who was so great a fool in his own
 ‘ family, should be wise in public affairs. And
 ‘ though second marriages were permitted among the
 ‘ Romans, yet they were at the same time discour-
 ‘ aged; and those Roman widows who refused them,
 ‘ were held in high esteem, and honoured with what
 ‘ Valerius Maximus calls the Corona Pudicitiae. In
 ‘ the noble family of Camilli, there was not, in many
 ‘ ages, a single instance of this, which Martial calls
 ‘ adultery :

Quæ toties nubit, non nubit; adultera lege est.

‘ True, Sir, says Mrs. Bennet, and Virgil calls
 ‘ this a violation of chastity, and makes Dido speak
 ‘ of it with the utmost detestation :

*Sed mihi vel Tellus optem prius ima debiscat;
 Vel Pater omnipotens adigat me fulmine ad umbras,
 Pallentes umbras Erebi, noctemque profundam,
 Ante, pudor, quam te violo, aut tua jura resolvo.
 Ille meos, primum qui me sibi junxit, amores,
 Ille habeat semper secum, servetque Sepulchro.*

She repeated these lines with so strong an emphasis, that she almost frightened Amelia out of her wits, and not a little staggered Booth, who was himself no contemptible scholar—He expressed great admiration of the lady’s learning; upon which she said it was all the fortune given her by her father, and all the dower left her by her husband; ‘ and sometimes,’ said she, ‘ I am inclined to think I enjoy more pleasure from it, ‘ than if they had bestowed on me what the world ‘ would in general call more valuable.’ She then took occasion from the surprize which Booth had affected to conceive at her repeating Latin with so good a grace, to comment on that great absurdity, (for so she termed it) of excluding women from learning; for which they were equally qualified with the men, and in which so many had made so notable a proficiency; for a proof of which, she mentioned madam Dacier, and many others.

Though both Booth and Amelia outwardly concurred with her sentiments, it may be a question whether

ther they did not assent rather out of complaisance, than from their real judgment.

C H A P. VIII.

Containing some unaccountable behaviour in Mrs. Ellison.

MRS. Ellison made her entrance at the end of the preceding discourse. At her first appearance she put on an unusual degree of formality and reserve; but when Amelia had acquainted her that she designed to accept the favour intended her, she soon began to alter the gravity of her muscles, and presently fell in with that ridicule which Booth thought proper to throw on his yesterday's behaviour.

The conversation now became very lively and pleasant, in which Booth having mentioned the discourse that passed in the last chapter, and having greatly complimented Mrs. Bennet's speech on that occasion, Mrs. Ellison, who was as strenuous an advocate on the other side, began to rally that lady extremely, declaring it was a certain sign she intended to marry again soon. 'Married ladies,' cries she, 'I believe, sometimes think themselves in earnest in such declarations, though they are oftner perhaps meant as compliments to their husbands; but when widows exclaim loudly against second marriages, I would always lay a wager, that the man, if not the wedding-day, is absolutely fixed on.'

Mrs. Bennet made very little answer to this sarcasm. Indeed she had scarce opened her lips from the time of Mrs. Ellison's coming into the room, and had grown particularly grave at the mention of the masquerade. Amelia imputed this to her being left out of the party, a matter which is often no small mortification to human pride, and in a whisper asked Mrs. Ellison if she could not procure a third ticket; to which she received an absolute negative.

During the whole time of Mrs. Bennet's stay, which was above an hour afterwards, she remained perfectly silent, and looked extremely melancholy. This made Amelia very uneasy, as she concluded she had guessed the cause of her vexation. In which opinion she was
the

the more confirmed from certain looks of no very pleasant kind, which Mrs. Bennet now and then cast on Mrs. Ellifon, and the more than ordinary concern that appeared in the former lady's countenance, whenever the masquerade was mentioned, and which unfortunately was the principal topic of their discourse: for Mrs. Ellifon gave a very elaborate description of the extreme beauty of the place, and elegance of the diversion.

When Mrs. Bennet was departed, Amelia could not help again solliciting Mrs. Ellifon for another ticket, declaring she was certain Mrs. Bennet had a great inclination to go with them; but Mrs. Ellifon again excused herself from asking it of his lordship. 'Besides, madam,' says she, 'if I would go thither with Mrs. Bennet, which, I own to you, I don't chuse, as she is a person whom *no body knows*, I very much doubt whether she herself would like it: for she is a woman of a very unaccountable turn. All her delight lies in books; and, as for public diversions, I have heard her often declare her abhorrence of them.'

'What then,' said Amelia, 'could occasion all that gravity from the moment the masquerade was mentioned?'

'As to that,' answered the other, 'there is no guessing. You have seen her altogether as grave before now. She hath had these fits of gravity at times ever since the death of her husband.'

'Poor creature!' cries Amelia. I heartily pity her. For she must certainly suffer a great deal on these occasions. I declare I have taken a strange fancy to her.'

'Perhaps you would not like her so well, if you knew her thoroughly,' answered Mrs. Ellifon. She is upon the whole but of a whimsical temper; and if you will take my opinion, you should not cultivate too much intimacy with her. I know you will never mention what I say; but she is like some pictures which please best at a distance.'

Amelia did not seem to agree with these sentiments, and she greatly importuned Mrs. Ellifon to be more explicit;

explicit; but to no purpose; she continued to give only dark hints to Mrs. Bennet's disadvantage; and, if ever she let drop something a little too harsh, she failed not immediately to contradict herself, by throwing some gentle commendations into the other scale; so that her conduct appeared utterly unaccountable to Amelia, and upon the whole she knew not whether to conclude Mrs. Ellifon to be a friend or enemy to Mrs. Bennet.

During this latter conversation, Booth was not in the room: for he had been summoned down stairs by the serjeant, who came to him with news from Murphy whom he had met that evening, and who assured the serjeant, that if he was desirous of recovering the debt, and which he had before pretended to have on Booth, he might shortly have an opportunity; for that there was to be a very strong petition to the board, the next time they sat. Murphy said further, that he need not fear having his money: for that to his certain knowledge the captain had several things of great value, and even his children had gold-watches.

This greatly alarmed Booth, and still more, when the serjeant reported to him from Murphy, that all these things had been seen in his possession within a day last past. He now plainly perceived, as he thought, that Murphy himself, or one of his emissaries, had been the supposed madman; and he now very well accounted to himself in his own mind, for all that had happened, conceiving that the design was to examine into the state of his effects, and to try whether it was worth his creditors while to plunder him by law.

At his return to his apartment, he communicated what he had heard to Amelia and Mrs. Ellifon, not disguising his apprehensions of the enemy's intentions; but Mrs. Ellifon endeavoured to laugh him out of his fears, calling him faint-hearted, and assuring him he might depend on her lawyer.—‘Till
‘you hear from him,’ said she, ‘you may rest entire-
‘ly contented: for take my word for it, no danger
‘can happen to you, of which you will not be timely
‘apprised by him. And as for the fellow that had
‘the impudence to come into your room, if he was
‘sent

‘ sent on such an errand as you mention, I heartily wish
‘ I had been at home ; I would have secured him safe
‘ with a constable, and have carried him directly be-
‘ fore justice Thresher. I know the justice is an ene-
‘ my to bailiffs on his own account.’

This heartening speech a little roused the courage of Booth, and somewhat comforted Amelia, though the spirits of both had been too much hurried, to suffer them either to give or receive much entertainment that evening ; which Mrs. Ellison perceiving, soon took her leave, and left this unhappy couple to seek relief from sleep, that powerful friend to the distressed, though, like other powerful friends, he is not always ready to give his assistance to those who want it most.

C H A P. IX.

Containing a very strange incident.

W H E N the husband and wife were alone, they again talked over the news which the serjeant had brought ; on which occasion, Amelia did all she could to conceal her own fears, and to quiet those of her husband. At last she turned the conversation to another subject, and poor Mrs. Bennet was brought on the carpet. ‘ I should be sorry,’ cries Amelia, ‘ to find I had conceived an affection for a bad woman ; and yet I begin to fear Mrs. Ellison knows something of her more than she cares to discover ; why else should she be unwilling to be seen with her in public ? besides, I have observed that Mrs. Ellison hath been always backward to introduce her to me, nor would ever bring her to my apartment, though I have often desired her. Nay, she hath given me frequent hints not to cultivate the acquaintance. What do you think, my dear ?—I should be very sorry to contract an intimacy with a wicked person.’

‘ Nay, my dear,’ cries Booth, ‘ I know no more of her, nor indeed hardly so much as yourself. But this I think, that if Mrs. Ellison knows any reason why she should not have introduced Mrs. Bennet in-

‘ to your company, she was very much in the wrong
‘ in introducing her into it.’

In discourses of this kind they past the remainder of the evening. In the morning Booth rose early, and going down stairs received from little Betty a sealed note, which contained the following words :

Beware, beware, beware,
For I apprehend a dreadful snare
Is laid for virtuous innocence,
Under a friend’s false pretence.

Booth immediately enquired of the girl who brought this note, and was told it came by a chairman, who, having delivered it, departed without saying a word.

He was extremely staggered at what he read, and presently referred the advice to the same affair on which he had received those hints from Atkinson the preceding evening ; but when he came to consider the words more maturely, he could not so well reconcile the two last lines of this poetical epistle, if it may be so called, with any danger which the law gave him reason to apprehend. Mr. Murphy and his gang could not well be said to attack his innocence or virtue ; nor did they attack him under any colour or pretence of friendship.

After much deliberation on this matter, a very strange suspicion came into his head ; and this was, that he was betrayed by Mrs. Ellison. He had for some time conceived no very high opinion of that good gentlewoman, and he now began to suspect that she was bribed to betray him. By this means he thought he could best account for the strange appearance of the supposed madman. And when this conceit once had birth in his mind ; several circumstances nourished and improved it. Among these were her jocular behaviour and raillery on that occasion, and her attempt to ridicule his fears from the message which the serjeant had brought him.

This suspicion was indeed preposterous, and not at all warranted by, or even consistent with the character and whole behaviour of Mrs. Ellison ; but it was the only one which at that time suggested itself to his mind ;

mind ; and however blameable it might be, it was certainly not unnatural in him to entertain it : for so great a torment is anxiety to the human mind, that we always endeavour to relieve ourselves from it, by guesses however doubtful or uncertain ; on all which occasions dislike and hatred are the surest guides to lead our suspicion to its object.

When Amelia rose to breakfast, Booth produced the note which he had received, saying, ‘ my dear, you have so often blamed me for keeping secrets from you, and I have so often indeed endeavoured to conceal secrets of this kind from you with such ill success, that, I think I shall never more attempt it.’ Amelia read the letter hastily, and seemed not a little discomposed ; then turning to Booth with a very disconsolate countenance, she said, ‘ sure fortune takes a delight in terrifying us ! what can be the meaning of this ?’ — Then fixing her eyes attentively on the paper, she perused it for some time, till Booth cried — ‘ How is it possible, my Emily, you can read such stuff patiently ! the verses are certainly as bad as ever were written.’ ‘ I was trying, my dear,’ answered she, ‘ to recollect the hand ; for I will take my oath, I have seen it before, and that very lately,’ and suddenly she cried out with great emotion, I remember it perfectly now — ‘ It is Mrs. Bennet’s hand. Mrs. Ellison shewed me a letter from her but a day or two ago. It is a very remarkable hand, and I am positive it is her’s.’

‘ If it be her’s,’ cries Booth, ‘ what can she possibly mean by the latter part of her caution ? sure Mrs. Ellison hath no intention to betray us.’

‘ I know not what she means,’ answered Amelia, ‘ but I am resolved to know immediately ; for I am certain of the hand. By the greatest luck in the world, she told me yesterday where her lodgings were, when she pressed me exceedingly to come and see her. She lives but a very few doors from us, and I will go to her this moment.’

Booth made not the least objection to his wife’s design. His curiosity was indeed as great as her’s, and so was his impatience to satisfy it, though he mentioned

ed not this his impatience to Amelia; and perhaps it had been well for him if he had.

Amelia therefore presently equipped herself in her walking dress, and leaving her children to the care of her husband, made all possible haste to Mrs. Bennet's lodgings.

Amelia waited near five minutes at Mrs. Bennet's door, before any one came to open it; at length a maid-servant appeared, who being asked if Mrs. Bennet was at home, answered with some confusion in her countenance, that she did not know, 'but, madam,' said she, 'if you will send up your name, I will go and see.' Amelia then told her name, and the wench, after staying a considerable time, returned and acquainted her that Mrs. Bennet was at home. She was then ushered into a parlour, and told that the lady would wait on her presently.

In this parlour, Amelia cooled her heels, as the phrase is, near a quarter of an hour. She seemed indeed at this time, in the miserable situation of one of those poor wretches, who make their morning visits to the great, to solicit favours, or perhaps to solicit the payment of a debt: for both are alike treated as beggars, and the latter sometimes considered as the more troublesome beggars of the two.

During her stay here, Amelia observed the house to be in great confusion; a great bustle was heard above stairs, and the maid ran up and down several times in a great hurry.

At length Mrs. Bennet herself came in. She was greatly disordered in her looks, and had, as the women call it, huddled on her cloaths in much haste; for in truth, she was in bed when Amelia first came. Of this fact she informed her, as the only apology she could make for having caused her to wait so long for her company.

Amelia very readily accepted her apology, but asked her with a smile, if these early hours were usual with her. Mrs. Bennet turned as red as scarlet at the question, and answered, 'no indeed, dear madam. I am, for the most part, a very early riser; but I happened accidentally to sit up very late last night.'

'I am

‘ I am sure I had little expectation of your intending
‘ such a favour this morning.’

Amelia looking very stedfastly at her, said: ‘ Is it
‘ possible, madam, you should think such a note as
‘ this would raise no curiosity in me?’ she then gave
her the note, asking her if she did not know the hand.

Mrs. Bennet appeared in the utmost surprise and
confusion at this instant. Indeed, if Amelia had con-
ceived but the slightest suspicion before, the behaviour
of the lady would have been a sufficient confirmation
to her of the truth. She waited not therefore for an
answer; which, indeed, the other seemed in no haste
to give; but conjured her in the most earnest manner,
to explain to her the meaning of so extraordinary an
act of friendship: ‘ For so,’ said she, ‘ I esteem it;
‘ being convinced you must have sufficient reason for
‘ the warning you have given me.’

Mrs. Bennet, after some hesitation, answered; ‘ I
‘ need not, I believe, tell you how much I am sur-
‘ prised at what you have shewn me, and the chief
‘ reason of my surprise is; how you came to discover
‘ my hand. Sure, madam, you have not shewn it to
‘ Mrs. Ellison.’

Amelia declared she had not; but desired she would
question her no farther. ‘ What signifies how I dis-
‘ covered it, since your hand it certainly is?’

‘ I own it is,’ cries Mrs. Bennet, recovering her
spirits, ‘ and since you have not shewn it to that wo-
‘ man, I am satisfied. I begin to guess now whence you
‘ might have your information; but no matter, I wish
‘ I had never done any thing of which I ought to be
‘ more ashamed.—No one can, I think, justly ac-
‘ cuse me of a crime on that account; and I thank
‘ Heaven, my shame will never be directed by the
‘ false opinion of the world.—Perhaps it was wrong
‘ to shew my letter; but when I consider all circum-
‘ stances, I can forgive it.’

‘ Since you have guessed the truth,’ said Amelia,
‘ I am not obliged to deny it. She indeed, shewed
‘ me your letter; but I am sure you have not the
‘ least reason to be ashamed of it. On the contrary,
‘ your behaviour on so melancholy an occasion was
‘ highly

‘ highly praise-worthy ; and your bearing up under
‘ such afflictions, as the loss of a husband in so dread-
‘ ful a situation, was truly great and heroical.’

‘ So Mrs. Ellifon then hath shewn you my letter ?’
cries Mrs. Bennet eagerly.

‘ Why, did not you guess it yourself ?’ answered
Amelia, ‘ otherwise I am sure I have betrayed my ho-
‘ nour in mentioning it. I hope you have not drawn
‘ me inadvertently into any breach of my promise.
‘ Did you not assert, and that with an absolute cer-
‘ tainty, that you knew she had shewn me your letter,
‘ and that you was not angry with her for so doing ?’

‘ I am so confused,’ replied Mrs. Bennet, ‘ that I
‘ scarce know what I say ; yes, yes, I remember I did
‘ say so — I wish I had no greater reason to be an-
‘ gry with her than that.’

‘ For Heaven’s sake,’ cries Amelia, ‘ do not delay
‘ my request any longer ? what you say now greatly
‘ increases my curiosity ; and my mind will be on the
‘ rack till you discover your whole meaning : for I am
‘ more and more convinced, that something of the ut-
‘ most importance was the purport of your message.’

‘ Of the utmost importance, indeed,’ cries Mrs.
Bennet, ‘ at least you will own my apprehensions were
‘ sufficiently well founded — O gracious Heaven, how
‘ happy shall I think myself, if I should have proved
‘ your preservation ! I will indeed explain my mean-
‘ ing ; but in order to disclose all my fears in their
‘ just colours, I must unfold my whole history to you.
‘ Can you have patience, madam, to listen to the story
‘ of the most unfortunate of women ?’

Amelia assured her of the highest attention ; and
Mrs. Bennet soon after began to relate what is written
in the seventh book of this history.

AMELIA.

A M E L I A.

B O O K VII.

C H A P. I.

A very short chapter, and consequently requiring no preface.

MRS. Bennet having fastened the door, and both the ladies having taken their places, she once or twice offered to speak, when passion stopt her utterance; and after a minute's silence, she burst into a flood of tears. Upon which, Amelia expressing the utmost tenderness for her, as well by her look as by her accent; cried,—‘What can be the reason, dear madam, of all this emotion?’—‘O Mrs. Booth,’ answered she,—‘I find I have undertaken what I am not able to perform—You would not wonder at my emotion, if you knew you had an adulteress and a murderer now standing before you.’

Amelia turned as pale as death at these words, which Mrs. Bennet observing, collected all the force she was able, and a little composing her countenance, cried, ‘I see, madam, I have terrified you with such dreadful words; but I hope you will not think me guilty of these crimes in the blackest degree.’—‘Guilty!’ cries Amelia. ‘O Heavens!’ ‘I believe indeed your candour,’ continued Mrs. Bennet, ‘will be readier to acquit me than I am to acquit myself—Indiscretion, at least, the highest, most unpardonable indiscretion, I shall always lay to my own charge; and when I reflect on the fatal consequences, I can never, never forgive myself.’ Here she again began to lament in so bitter a manner, that Amelia endeavoured, as much as she could (for she was herself

greatly shocked) to soothe and comfort her; telling her, that if indiscretion was her highest crime, the unhappy consequences made her rather an unfortunate than a guilty person; and concluded by saying,—‘ Indeed, madam, you have raised my curiosity to the highest pitch, and I beg you will proceed with your story.’

Mrs. Bennet then seemed a second time going to begin her relation, when she cried out, ‘ I would, if possible, tire you with no more of my unfortunate life than just with that part which leads to a catastrophe, in which I think you may yourself be interested; but I protest I am at a loss where to begin.’

‘ Begin wherever you please, dear madam,’ cries Amelia; ‘ but I beg you will consider my impatience.’ ‘ I do consider it,’ answered Mrs. Bennet; ‘ and therefore would begin with that part of my story which leads directly to what concerns yourself: for how, indeed, should my life produce any thing worthy your notice?’—‘ Do not say so, madam,’ cries Amelia. ‘ I assure you I have long suspected there were some very remarkable incidents in your life, and have only wanted an opportunity to impart to you my desire of hearing them:—I beg therefore you would make no more apologies.’—‘ I will not, madam,’ cries Mrs. Bennet, ‘ and yet I would avoid any thing trivial; though, indeed, in stories of distress, especially where love is concerned, many little incidents may appear trivial to those who have never felt the passion, which to delicate minds are the most interesting part of the whole.’—‘ Nay, but, dear madam,’ cries Amelia, ‘ this is all preface.’

‘ Well, madam,’ answered Mrs. Bennet, ‘ I will consider your impatience.’ She then rallied all her spirits in the best manner she could, and began as is written in the next chapter.

And here possibly the reader will blame Mrs. Bennet for taking her story so far back, and relating so much of her life in which Amelia had no concern; but in truth, she was desirous of inculcating a good opinion of herself, from recounting those transactions where her

her conduct was unexceptionable, before she came to the more dangerous and suspicious part of her character. This I really suppose to have been her intention: for to sacrifice the time and patience of Amelia at such a season, to the mere love of talking of herself, would have been as unpardonable in her, as the bearing it was in Amelia a proof of the most perfect good breeding.

C H A P. II.

The beginning of Mrs. Bennet's history.

‘ I Was the younger of two daughters of a clergy-
 ‘ man in Essex; of one in whose praise, if I should
 ‘ indulge my fond heart in speaking, I think my in-
 ‘ vention could not outgo the reality. He was indeed
 ‘ well worthy of the cloth he wore; and that, I think,
 ‘ is the highest character a man can obtain.

‘ During the first part of my life, even till I reached
 ‘ my sixteenth year, I can recollect nothing to relate
 ‘ to you. All was one long serene day; in looking
 ‘ back upon which, as when we cast our eyes on a
 ‘ calm sea, no object arises to my view. All appears
 ‘ one scene of happiness and tranquillity.

‘ On the day, then, when I became sixteen years
 ‘ old, must I begin my history; for on that day, I
 ‘ first tasted the bitterness of sorrow.

‘ My father, besides those prescribed by our reli-
 ‘ gion, kept five festivals every year. These were on
 ‘ his wedding-day, and on the birth-day of each of his
 ‘ little family: on these occasions he used to invite
 ‘ two or three neighbours to his house, and to indulge
 ‘ himself, as he said, in great excess: for so he called
 ‘ drinking a pint of very small punch; and, indeed,
 ‘ it might appear excess to one who on other days
 ‘ rarely tasted any liquor stronger than small beer.

‘ Upon my unfortunate birth-day, then, when we
 ‘ were all in a high degree of mirth, my mother hav-
 ‘ ing left the room after dinner, and staying away
 ‘ pretty long, my father sent me to see for her. I
 ‘ went according to his orders; but though I searched
 ‘ the whole house, and called after her without doors,

I could neither see nor hear her. I was a little alarmed at this (though far from suspecting any great mischief had befallen her) and ran back to acquaint my father, who answered coolly, (for he was a man of the calmest temper,) "Very well, my dear, I suppose she is not gone far, and will be here immediately." Half an hour or more past after this, when, she not returning, my father himself expressed some surprise at her stay; declaring, it must be some matter of importance which could detain her at that time from her company. His surprise now increased every minute; and he began to grow uneasy, and to shew sufficient symptoms in his countenance of what he felt within. He then dispatched the servant maid to enquire after her mistress in the parish; but waited not her return; for she was scarce gone out of doors, before he begged leave of his guests to go himself on the same errand. The company now all broke up, and attended my father, all endeavouring to give him hopes that no mischief had happened. They searched the whole parish; but in vain: they could neither see my mother, nor hear any news of her. My father returned home in a state little short of distraction. His friends in vain attempted to administer either advice or comfort; he threw himself on the floor in the most bitter agonies of despair.

Whilst he lay in this condition, my sister and myself lying by him, all equally, I believe, and completely miserable, our old servant maid came into the room, and cried out, her mind misgave her, that she knew where her mistress was. Upon these words, my father sprang from the floor, and asked her eagerly, where? — But oh! Mrs. Booth, how can I describe the particulars of a scene to you, the remembrance of which chills my blood with horror, and which the agonies of my mind, when it past, made all a scene of confusion! the fact then in short was this; my mother, who was a most indulgent mistress to one servant, which was all we kept, was unwilling, I suppose, to disturb her at her dinner; and therefore went herself to fill her tea-kettle at a

well,

well, into which, stretching herself too far, as we imagine, the water then being very low, she fell with the tea-kettle in her hand. The missing this, gave the poor old wretch the first hint of her suspicion, which, upon examination, was found to be too well grounded.

What we all suffered on this occasion may more easily be felt than described.—“It may indeed,” answered Amelia, “and I am so sensible of it, that unless you have a mind to see me faint before your face, I beg you will order me something ; a glass of water, if you please.” Mrs. Bennet immediately complied with her friend’s request ; a glass of water was brought, and some hartshorn drops infused into it : which Amelia having drank off, declared she found herself much better ; and then Mrs. Bennet proceeded thus :

“I will not dwell on a scene which I see hath already so much affected your tender heart, and which is as disagreeable to me to relate, as it can be to you to hear. I will therefore only mention to you the behaviour of my father on this occasion, which was indeed becoming a philosopher and a christian divine. On the day after my mother’s funeral, he sent for my sister and myself into his room ; where, after many caresses, and every demonstration of fatherly tenderness, as well in silence as in words, he began to exhort us to bear with patience the great calamity that had befallen us ; saying, “That as every human accident, how terrible soever, must happen to us by divine permission at least, a due sense of our duty to our great creator, must teach us an absolute submission to his will. Not only religion, but common sense must teach us this ; for oh ! my dear children,” cries he, “how vain is all resistance, all repining ! could tears wash back again my angel from the grave, I should drain all the juices of my body through my eyes ; but oh, could we fill up that cursed well with our tears, how fruitless would be all our sorrow !”—“I think I repeat you his very words : for the impression they made on me is never to be obliterated.—He then

‘ proceeded to comfort us with the chearful thought
‘ that the loss was entirely our own, and that my mother
‘ was greatly a gainer by the accident which we
‘ lamented. “ I have a wife,” cries he, “ my
‘ children, and you have a mother now amongst the
‘ heavenly choir: how selfish therefore is all our
‘ grief! how cruel to her are all our wishes!”—‘ In
‘ this manner he talked to us near half an hour,
‘ though I must frankly own to you, his arguments
‘ had not the immediate good effect on us which they
‘ deserved: for we retired from him very little the
‘ better for his exhortations; however, they became
‘ every day more and more forcible upon our recollection;
‘ indeed, they were greatly strengthened by
‘ his example: for in this, as in all other instances,
‘ he practised the doctrines which he taught. From
‘ this day he never mentioned my mother more, and
‘ soon after recovered his usual chearfulness in public;
‘ though I have reason to think he paid many a
‘ bitter sigh in private to that remembrance, which
‘ neither philosophy nor christianity could expunge.

‘ My father’s advice, enforced by his example, together
‘ with the kindness of some of our friends, assisted
‘ by that ablest of all the mental physicians, time,
‘ in a few months pretty well restored my tranquillity,
‘ when fortune made a second attack on my quiet.
‘ My sister, whom I dearly loved, and who as warmly
‘ returned my affection, had fallen into an ill state of
‘ health some time before the fatal accident which I
‘ have related. She was indeed at that time so much
‘ better, that we had great hopes of her perfect recovery;
‘ but the disorders of her mind on that dreadful occasion
‘ so affected her body, that she presently relapsed to
‘ her former declining state, and thence grew continually
‘ worse and worse, till after a decay of near
‘ seven months, she followed my poor mother to the
‘ grave.

‘ I will not tire you, dear madam, with repetitions
‘ of grief; I will only mention two observations which
‘ have occurred to me from reflexions on the two
‘ losses I have mentioned. The first is, that a mind
‘ once violently hurt, grows, as it were, callous to any
‘ future

‘ future impressions of grief; and is never capable of
‘ feeling the same pangs a second time. The other ob-
‘ servation is, that the arrows of fortune, as well as all
‘ others, derive their force from the velocity with which
‘ they are discharged: for when they approach you by
‘ slow and perceptible degrees, they have but very lit-
‘ tle power to do you mischief.

‘ The truth of these observations I experienced, not
‘ only in my own heart, but in the behaviour of my
‘ father, whose philosophy seemed to gain a complete
‘ triumph over this latter calamity.

‘ Our family was now reduced to two; and my fa-
‘ ther grew extremely fond of me, as if he had now
‘ conferred an entire stock of affection on me, that had
‘ before been divided. His words indeed testified no
‘ less: for he daily called me his only darling, his
‘ whole comfort, his all. He committed the whole
‘ charge of his house to my care, and gave me the
‘ name of his little house-keeper, an appellation of
‘ which I was then as proud as any minister of state
‘ can be of his titles. But though I was very industrious
‘ in the discharge of my occupation, I did not, how-
‘ ever, neglect my studies, in which I had made so
‘ great a proficiency, that I was become a pretty good
‘ mistress of the Latin language, and had made some
‘ progress in the Greek. I believe, madam, I have
‘ formerly acquainted you, that learning was the chief
‘ estate I inherited of my father, in which he had in-
‘ structed me from my earliest youth.

‘ The kindness of this good man had at length
‘ wiped off the remembrance of all losses; and I, dur-
‘ ing two years, led a life of great tranquillity, I
‘ think, I might almost say of perfect happiness.

‘ I was now in the nineteenth year of my age, when
‘ my father’s good fortune removed us from the
‘ county of Essex into Hampshire, where a living was
‘ conferred on him by one of his old school-fellows,
‘ of twice the value of what he was before possessed
‘ of.

‘ His predecessor in this new living had died in
‘ very indifferent circumstances, and had left behind
‘ him a widow with two small children. My father,

therefore, who, with great œconomy, had a most generous soul, bought the whole furniture of the parsonage-house at a very high price ; some of it indeed he would have wanted : for though our little habitation in Essex was most completely furnished ; yet it bore no proportion to the largeness of that house in which he was now to dwell.

His motive, however, to the purchase was, I am convinced, solely generosity ; which appeared sufficiently by the price he gave, and may be farther enforced by the kindness he shewed the widow in another instance : for he assigned her an apartment for the use of herself and her little family ; which, he told her, she was welcome to enjoy as long as it suited her conveniency.

As this widow was very young, and generally thought to be tolerably pretty, though I own she had a cast with her eyes which I never liked, my father, you may suppose, acted from a less noble principle than I have hinted : but I must in justice acquit him ; for these kind offers were made her before ever he had seen her face ; and I have the greatest reason to think, that, for a long time after he had seen her, he beheld her with much indifference.

This act of my father's gave me, when I first heard it, great satisfaction : for I may, at least, with the modesty of the ancient philosophers, call myself a lover of generosity ; but when I became acquainted with the widow, I was still more delighted with what my father had done : for though I could not agree with those who thought her a consummate beauty, I must allow that she was very fully possessed of the power of making herself agreeable ; and this power she exerted with so much success, with such indefatigable industry to oblige, that within three months I became in the highest manner pleased with my new acquaintance, and had contracted the most sincere friendship for her.

But if I was so pleased with the widow, my father was by this time enamoured of her. She had, indeed, by the most artful conduct in the world, so insinuated herself into his favour, so entirely insinuated

tuated him, that he never shewed the least marks of chearfulness in her absence, and could, in truth, scarce bear that she should be out of his sight.

She had managed this matter so well, (O she is the most artful of women!) my father's heart was gone before I ever suspected it was in danger. The discovery, you may easily believe, madam, was not pleasing. The name of a mother-in-law founded dreadful in my ears, nor could I bear the thought of parting again with a share in those dear affections, of which I had purchased the whole by the loss of a beloved mother and sister.

In the first hurry and disorder of my mind on this occasion, I committed a crime of the highest kind against all the laws of prudence and discretion. I took the young lady herself very roundly to task, treated her designs on my father as little better than a design to commit a theft; and in my passion, I believe, said she might be ashamed to think of marrying a man old enough to be her grandfather: for so in reality he almost was.

The lady on this occasion acted finely the part of a hypocrite. She affected to be highly affronted at my unjust suspicions, as she called them, and proceeded to such asseverations of her innocence, that she almost brought me to discredit the evidence of my own eyes and ears.

My father, however, acted much more honestly: for he fell the next day into a more violent passion with me than I had ever seen him in before, and asked me, whether I intended to return his paternal fondness by assuming the right of controlling his inclinations? with more of the like kind, which fully convinced me what had passed between him and the lady, and how little I had injured her in my suspicions.

Hitherto I frankly own my aversion to this match had been principally on my own account: for I had no ill opinion of the woman, though I thought neither her circumstances nor my father's age, promised any kind of felicity from such an union; but now I

‘ learnt some particulars, which, had not our quarrel
‘ become public in the parish, I should, perhaps, have
‘ never known. In short, I was informed, that this
‘ gentle obliging creature, as she had at first appeared
‘ to me, had the spirit of a tigress, and was by many
‘ believed to have broken the heart of her first husband.

‘ The truth of this matter being confirmed to me
‘ upon examination, I resolved not to suppress it.
‘ On this occasion fortune seemed to favour me, by
‘ giving me a speedy opportunity of seeing my father
‘ alone and in good humour. He now first began to
‘ open his intended marriage, telling me that he had
‘ formerly had some religious objections to bigamy,
‘ but he had very fully considered the matter, and
‘ had satisfied himself of its legality. He then faithfully
‘ promised me, that no second marriage should
‘ in the least impair his affection for me; and concluded with the highest eulogiums on the goodness of
‘ the widow, protesting that it was her virtues and not
‘ her person with which he was enamoured.

‘ I now fell upon my knees before him, and bathing
‘ his hand in my tears, which flowed very plentifully
‘ from my eyes, acquainted him with all I had
‘ heard; and was so very imprudent, I might almost
‘ say so cruel, to disclose the author of my information.

‘ My father heard me without any indication of
‘ passion; and answered coldly, that if there was any
‘ proof of such facts, he should decline any further
‘ thoughts of this match; “ But child,” said he,
‘ “ though I am far from suspecting the truth of what
‘ “ you tell me, as far as regards your knowledge; yet
‘ “ you know the inclination of the world to slander.”
‘ However, before we parted, he promised to make a
‘ proper enquiry into what I had told him.—But I ask
‘ your pardon, dear madam, I am running minutely
‘ into those particulars of my life, in which you have
‘ not the least concern.’

Amelia stopt her friend short in her apology, and
though, perhaps, she thought her impertinent enough,
yet, (such was her good breeding) she gave her many
assurances

assurances of a curiosity to know every incident of her life which she could remember; after which, Mrs. Bennet proceeded as in the next chapter.

C H A P. III.

Continuation of Mrs. Bennet's story.

“**I** Think, madam,” said Mrs. Bennet, “I told you my father promised me to enquire farther into the affair; but he had hardly time to keep his word: for we separated pretty late in the evening, and early the next morning he was married to the widow.”

“But though he gave no credit to my information, I had sufficient reason to think he did not forget it, by the resentment which he soon discovered to both the persons whom I had named as my informers.”

“Nor was it long before I had good cause to believe, that my father’s new wife was perfectly well acquainted with the good opinion I had of her, not only from her usage of me, but from certain hints, which she threw forth with an air of triumph. One day particularly, I remember she said to my father, upon his mentioning his age, “O, my dear, I hope you have many years yet to live; unless, indeed, I should be so cruel as to break your heart.” She spoke these words, looking me full in the face, and accompanied them with a sneer, in which the highest malice was visible, under a thin covering of affected pleasantry.

“I will not entertain you, madam, with any thing so common as the cruel usage of a step-mother; nor of what affected me much more, the unkind behaviour of a father under such an influence. It shall suffice only to tell you, that I had the mortification to perceive the gradual and daily decrease of my father’s affection. His smiles were converted into frowns; the tender appellations of child, and dear, were exchanged for plain Molly, that girl, that creature, and sometimes much harder names. I was at first turned all at once into a cypher, and at last seemed to be considered as a nuisance in the family.”

Thus altered was the man of whom I gave you such a character at the entrance on my story; but alas! he no longer acted from his own excellent disposition; but was in every thing governed and directed by my mother-in-law. In fact, whenever there is great disparity of years between husband and wife, the younger is, I believe, always possessed of absolute power over the elder: for superstition itself is a less firm support of absolute power than dotage.

But though his wife was so entirely mistress of my father's will, that she could make him use me ill, she could not so perfectly subdue his understanding, as to prevent him from being conscious of such ill usage; and from this consciousness he began inveterately to hate me. Of this hatred he gave me numberless instances, and I protest to you, I know not any other reason for it than what I have assigned; and the cause, as experience hath convinced me, is adequate to the effect.

While I was in this wretched situation, my father's unkindness having almost broken my heart, he came one day into my room with more anger in his countenance than I had ever seen; and after bitterly upbraiding me with my undutiful behaviour both to himself and his worthy consort, he bid me pack up my alls, and immediately prepare to quit his house; at the same time gave me a letter, and told me that would acquaint me where I might find a home; adding, that he doubted not but I expected, and had indeed solicited the invitation; and left me with a declaration that he would have no spies in his family.

The letter I found on opening it, was from my father's own sister; but before I mention the contents, I will give you a short sketch of her character, as it was somewhat particular. Her personal charms were not great; for she was very tall, very thin, and very homely. Of the defect of her beauty, she was, perhaps, sensible; her vanity therefore retreated into her mind, where there is no looking-glass, and consequently where we can flatter ourselves with dis-

covering

‘covering almost whatever beauties we please. This is an encouraging circumstance; and yet I have observed, dear Mrs. Booth, that few women ever seek these comforts from within, till they are driven to it by despair of finding any food for their vanity from without. Indeed, I believe, the first wish of our whole sex is to be handsome.’

Here both the ladies fixed their eyes on the glass, and both smiled.

‘My aunt, however,’ continued Mrs. Bennet, from despair of gaining any applause this way, had applied herself entirely to the contemplation of her understanding, and had improved this to such a pitch, that at the age of fifty, at which she was now arrived, she had contracted a hearty contempt for much the greater part of both sexes; for the women, as being idiots, and for the men, as the admirers of idiots. That word and fool were almost constantly in her mouth, and were bestowed with great liberality among all her acquaintance.

‘This lady had spent one day only at my father’s house in near two years. It was about a month before his second marriage. At her departure she took occasion to whisper me her opinion of the widow, whom she called a pretty idiot, and wondered how her brother could bear such company under his roof; for neither she nor I had at that time any suspicion of what afterwards happened.

‘The letter which my father had just received, and which was the first she had sent him since his marriage, was of such a nature, that I should be unjust if I blamed him for being offended; fool and idiot were both plentifully bestowed in it as well on himself as on his wife. But what, perhaps, had principally offended him, was that part which related to me: for after much panegyric on my understanding, and saying he was unworthy of such a daughter, she considered his match not only as the highest indiscretion, as it related to himself; but as a downright act of injustice to me. One expression in it I shall never forget. “You have placed,” said she, “a woman above your daughter,”

“ter,

“ter, who, in understanding, the only valuable
“gift of nature, is the lowest in the whole class of
“pretty idiots.” ‘After much more of this kind,
‘it concluded with inviting me to her house.

‘I can truly say, that when I had read the letter,
‘I entirely forgave my father’s suspicion, that I had
‘made some complaints to my aunt of his beha-
‘viour: for though I was indeed innocent, there was
‘surely colour enough to suspect the contrary.

‘Though I had never been greatly attached to
‘my aunt, nor indeed had she formerly given me
‘any reason for such an attachment; yet I was well
‘enough pleased with her present invitation. To
‘say the truth, I led so wretched a life where I then
‘was, that it was impossible not to be a gainer by
‘any exchange.

‘I could not, however, bear the thoughts of
‘leaving my father with an impression on his mind
‘against me which I did not deserve. I endeavour-
‘ed, therefore, to remove all his suspicion of my
‘having complained to my aunt by the most earnest
‘asseverations of my innocence; but they were all to
‘no purpose. All my tears, all my vows, and all
‘my entreaties were fruitless. My new mother in-
‘deed appeared to be my advocate; but she acted
‘her part very poorly, and far from counterfeiting
‘any desire of succeeding in my suit, she could not
‘conceal the excessive joy which she felt on the oc-
‘casion.

‘Well, Madam, the next day I departed for my
‘aunt’s, where, after a long journey of forty miles,
‘I arrived without having once broke my fast on
‘the road: for grief is as capable as food of filling
‘the stomach; and I had too much of the former
‘to admit any of the latter. The fatigue of my
‘journey, and the agitation of my mind, joined to
‘my fasting, so overpowered my spirits, that when
‘I was taken from my horse, I immediately fainted
‘away, in the arms of the man who helped me
‘from my saddle. My aunt expressed great asto-
‘nishment at seeing me in this condition, with my
‘eyes almost swollen out of my head with tears;
‘but

“ but my father’s letter, which I delivered her soon
“ after I came to myself, pretty well, I believe,
“ cured her surprize. She often smiled with a mixture
“ of contempt and anger, while she was reading it;
“ and having pronounced her brother to be a fool,
“ she turned to me, and with as much affability as
“ possible, (for she is no great mistress of affability)
“ said, “ Don’t be uneasy, dear Molly; for you are
“ come to the house of a friend; of one who hath
“ sense enough to discern the author of all the mis-
“ chief: depend upon it, child, I will ere long make
“ some people ashamed of their folly.” “ This kind
“ reception gave me some comfort, my aunt assuring
“ me that she would convince him how unjustly he
“ had accused me of having made any complaints to
“ her. A paper war was now begun between these
“ two, which not only fixed an irreconcilable hatred
“ between them; but confirmed my father’s displea-
“ sure against me, and in the end, I believe, did me
“ no service with my aunt: for I was considered by
“ both as the cause of their dissension; though in
“ fact, my step-mother, who very well knew the af-
“ fection my aunt had for her, had long since done
“ her business with my father; and as for my aunt’s
“ affection towards him, it had been abating several
“ years, from an apprehension that he did not pay suf-
“ ficient deference to her understanding.

“ I had lived about half a year with my aunt,
“ when I heard of my step-mother’s being delivered
“ of a boy, and the great joy my father expressed
“ on that occasion; but, poor man, he lived not
“ long to enjoy his happiness; for within a month
“ afterwards I had the melancholy news of his death.

“ Notwithstanding all the disobligations I had lately
“ received from him, I was sincerely afflicted at my
“ loss of him. All his kindness to me in my infancy,
“ all his kindness to me while I was growing up, re-
“ curred to my memory, raised a thousand tender,
“ melancholy ideas, and totally obliterated all thoughts
“ of his latter behaviour, for which I made also every
“ allowance and every excuse in my power.

“ But

‘ But what may perhaps appear more extraordinary, my aunt began soon to speak of him with concern. She said he had some understanding formerly, though his passion for that vile woman had in a great measure obscured it; and one day when she was in an ill humour with me, she had the cruelty to throw out a hint, that she had never quarrelled with her brother, if it had not been on my account.

‘ My father during his life had allowed my aunt very handsomely for my board; for generosity was too deeply riveted in his nature to be plucked out by all the power of his wife. So far, however, she prevailed, that though he died possessed of upwards of 2000*l*. he left me no more than 100*l*. which, as he expressed in his will, was to set me up in some business, if I had the grace to take to any.

‘ Hitherto my aunt had in general treated me with some degree of affection; but her behaviour began now to be changed. She soon took an opportunity of giving me to understand, that her fortune was insufficient to keep me: and as I could not live on the interest of my own, it was high time for me to consider about going into the world. She added, that her brother having mentioned my setting up in some business, in his will, was very foolish; that I had been bred to nothing; and besides, that the sum was too trifling to set me up in any way of reputation; she desired me therefore to think of immediately going into service.

‘ This advice was perhaps right enough; and I told her I was very ready to do as she directed me; but I was at that time in an ill state of health; I desired her therefore to let me stay with her, till my legacy, which was not to be paid till a year after my father’s death, was due; and I then promised to satisfy her for my board; to which she readily consented.

‘ And now, madam,’ said Mrs. Bennet sighing, ‘ I am going to open to you those matters which lead directly to that great catastrophe of my life, which hath

‘ hath occasioned my giving you this trouble, and of
‘ trying your patience in this manner.

Amelia, notwithstanding her impatience, made a very civil answer to this; and then Mrs. Bennet proceeded to relate what is written in the next chapter.

C H A P. IV.

Further Continuation.

‘ **T**HE curate of the parish where my aunt dwelt,
‘ was a young fellow of about four and twenty.
‘ He had been left an orphan in his infancy, and entirely unprovided for; when an uncle had the goodness to take care of his education, both at school and at the university. As the young gentleman was intended for the church, his uncle, though he had two daughters of his own, and no very large fortune, purchased for him the next presentation of a living of near 200*l.* a year. The incumbent, at the time of the purchase, was under the age of sixty, and in apparent good health; notwithstanding which he died soon after the bargain, and long before the nephew was capable of orders; so that the uncle was obliged to give the living to a clergyman, to hold it till the young man came of proper age.

‘ The young gentleman had not attained his proper age of taking orders, when he had the misfortune to lose his uncle and only friend; who, thinking he had sufficiently provided for his nephew by the purchase of the living, considered him no farther in his will, but divided all the fortune of which he died possessed, between his two daughters; recommending it to them, however, on his death-bed, to assist their cousin with money sufficient to keep him at the university, till he should be capable of ordination.

‘ But as no appointment of this kind was in the will, the young ladies, who received about 2000*l.* each, thought proper to disregard the last words of their father: for besides that both of them were extremely tenacious of their money, they were great enemies to their cousin, on account of their father’s
‘ kindness

‘ kindness to him, and thought proper to let him
‘ know that they thought he had robbed them of too
‘ much already.

‘ The poor young fellow was now greatly distressed:
‘ for he had yet above a year to stay at the univer-
‘ sity, without any visible means of sustaining himself
‘ there.

‘ In this distress, however, he met with a friend,
‘ who had the good-nature to lend him the sum of
‘ twenty pounds, for which he only accepted his bond
‘ for forty, and which was to be paid within a year
‘ after his being possessed of his living; that is, within
‘ a year after his becoming qualified to hold it.

‘ With this small sum thus hardly obtained, the
‘ poor gentleman made a shift to struggle with all
‘ difficulties, till he became of due age to take upon
‘ himself the character of a deacon. He then re-
‘ paired to that clergyman, to whom his uncle had
‘ given the living upon the conditions above-men-
‘ tioned, to procure a title to ordination; but this,
‘ to his great surprize and mortification, was abso-
‘ lutely refused him.

‘ The immediate disappointment did not hurt him
‘ so much as the conclusion he drew from it: for
‘ he could have but little hopes, that the man who
‘ could have the cruelty to refuse him a title, would
‘ vouchsafe afterwards to deliver up to him a living
‘ of so considerable a value; nor was it long before
‘ this worthy incumbent told him plainly, that he
‘ valued his uncle’s favours at too high a rate to part
‘ with them to any one; nay, he pretended scruples
‘ of conscience, and said, that if he had made any
‘ slight promises, which he did not now well remem-
‘ ber, they were wicked and void; that he looked
‘ upon himself as married to his parish, and he could
‘ no more give it up, than he could give up his wife,
‘ without sin.

‘ The poor young fellow was now obliged to seek
‘ farther for a title, which at length he obtained from
‘ the rector of the parish where my aunt lived.

‘ He had not long been settled in the curacy, be-
‘ fore an intimate acquaintance grew between him
‘ and

‘ and my aunt: for she was a great admirer of the
‘ clergy, and used frequently to say they were the
‘ only conversable creatures in the country.

‘ The first time she was in this gentleman’s com-
‘ pany was at a neighbour’s christening, where she
‘ stood god-mother. Here she displayed her whole
‘ little stock of knowledge, in order to captivate Mr.
‘ Bennet (I suppose, madam, you already guess that
‘ to have been his name) and before they parted,
‘ gave him a very strong invitation to her house.

‘ Not a word passed at this christening between
‘ Mr. Bennet and myself; but our eyes were not
‘ unemployed. Here, madam, I first felt a pleasing
‘ kind of confusion, which I know not how to de-
‘ scribe. I felt a kind of uneasiness; yet did not
‘ wish to be without it. I longed to be alone; yet
‘ dreaded the hour of parting. I could not keep my
‘ eyes off from the object which caused my confusion,
‘ and which I was at once afraid of and enamoured
‘ with.—But why do I attempt to describe my si-
‘ tuation to one who must, I am sure, have felt the
‘ same?

‘ Amelia smiled, and Mrs. Bennet went on thus,
‘ O, Mrs. Booth, had you seen the person of whom
‘ I am now speaking, you would not condemn the
‘ suddenness of my love. Nay, indeed, I had seen
‘ him there before, though this was the first time I
‘ had ever heard the music of his voice.—O! it was
‘ the sweetest that was ever heard.

‘ Mr. Bennet came to visit my aunt the very next
‘ day. She imputed this respectful haste to the power-
‘ ful charms of her understanding, and resolved to
‘ lose no opportunity in improving the opinion which
‘ she imagined he had conceived of her. She became
‘ by this desire quite ridiculous, and ran into absur-
‘ dities and a gallimatias scarce credible.

‘ Mr. Bennet, as I afterwards found, saw her in
‘ the same light with myself; but as he was a very
‘ sensible and well-bred man, he so well concealed
‘ his opinion from us both, that I was almost angry,
‘ and she was pleased even to raptures, declaring her-
‘ self charmed with his understanding; though indeed
‘ he

‘ he had said very little ; but I believe he heard himself
‘ into her good opinion, while he gazed himself into
‘ love.

‘ The two first visits which Mr. Bennet made to
‘ my aunt, though I was in the room all the time,
‘ I never spoke a word ; but on the third, on some
‘ argument which arose between them, Mr. Bennet
‘ referred himself to me. I took his side of the
‘ question, as indeed I must to have done justice, and
‘ repeated two or three words of Latin. My aunt
‘ reddened at this, and expressed great disdain of my
‘ opinion, declaring she was astonished that a man of
‘ Mr. Bennet’s understanding could appeal to the
‘ judgment of a silly girl : is she, said my aunt brid-
‘ ling herself, fit to decide between us ? Mr. Bennet
‘ spoke very favourably of what I had said ; upon
‘ which my aunt burst almost into a rage, treated me
‘ with downright scurrility, called me conceited fool,
‘ abused my poor father for having taught me Latin,
‘ which, she said, had made me a downright coxcomb,
‘ and made me prefer myself to those who were a hun-
‘ dred times my superiors in knowledge. She then
‘ fell foul on the learned languages, declared they
‘ were totally useless, and concluded that she had
‘ read all that was worth reading, though she thank-
‘ ed heaven she understood no language but her own.

‘ Before the end of his visit, Mr. Bennet reconciled
‘ himself very well to my aunt, which, indeed, was
‘ no difficult task for him to accomplish ; but from
‘ that hour she conceived a hatred and rancour to-
‘ wards me, which I could never appease.

‘ My aunt had, from my first coming into her
‘ house, expressed great dislike to my learning. In
‘ plain truth, she envied me that advantage. This
‘ envy I had long ago discovered ; and had taken
‘ great pains to smother it, carefully avoiding ever to
‘ mention a Latin word in her presence, and always
‘ submitting to her authority ; for indeed I despised
‘ her ignorance too much to dispute with her. By
‘ these means I had pretty well succeeded, and we
‘ lived tolerably together. But the affront paid to
‘ her understanding by Mr. Bennet in my favour was

‘ an

‘ an injury never to be forgiven to me. She took me
‘ severely to task that very evening, and reminded me
‘ of going to service, in such earnest terms, as almost
‘ amounted to literally turning me out of doors ; ad-
‘ vising me, in the most insulting manner, to keep
‘ my Latin to myself ; which, she said, was useless to
‘ any one ; but ridiculous, when pretended to by a
‘ servant.

‘ The next visit Mr. Bennet made at our house,
‘ I was not suffered to be present. This was much
‘ the shortest of all his visits ; and when he went
‘ away, he left my aunt in a worse humour than
‘ ever I had seen her. The whole was discharged
‘ on me in the usual manner, by upbraiding me with
‘ my learning, conceit, and poverty ; reminding me
‘ of obligations, and insisting on my going imme-
‘ diately to service. With all this I was greatly
‘ pleased, as it assured me, that Mr. Bennet had said
‘ something to her in my favour ; and I would have
‘ purchased a kind expression of his at almost any
‘ price.

‘ I should scarce, however, have been so sanguine
‘ as to draw this conclusion, had I not received some
‘ hints, that I had not unhappily placed my affections
‘ on a man who made me no return : for though he
‘ had scarce addressed a dozen sentences to me (for,
‘ indeed, he had no opportunity) yet his eyes had re-
‘ vealed certain secrets to mine, with which I was not
‘ displeased.

‘ I remained, however, in a state of anxiety near
‘ a month ; sometimes pleasing myself, with thinking
‘ Mr. Bennet’s heart was in the same situation with
‘ my own ; sometimes doubting that my wishes had
‘ flattered and deceived me ; and not in the least
‘ questioning that my aunt was my rival : for I
‘ thought no woman could be proof against the charms
‘ that had subdued me. Indeed, Mrs. Booth, he was
‘ a charming young fellow ; I must, I must pay this
‘ tribute to his memory—O, gracious heaven, why,
‘ why did I ever see him ! why was I doomed to such
‘ misery !’—Here she burst into a flood of tears, and
‘ remained incapable of speech for some time ; during
‘ which

which, the gentle Amelia endeavoured all she could to sooth her; and gave sufficient marks of sympathizing in the tender affliction of her friend.

Mrs. Bennet, at length, recovered her spirits, and proceeded, as in the next chapter.

C H A P. V.

The story of Mrs. Bennet continued.

‘ I SCARCE know where I left off—Oh! I was, I think, telling you, that I esteemed my aunt as my rival; and it is not easy to conceive a greater degree of detestation than I had for her; and what may perhaps appear strange, as she daily grew more and more civil to me, my hatred increased with her civility; for I imputed it all to her triumph over me, and to her having secured, beyond all apprehension, the heart I longed for.

‘ How was I surpris’d, when one day with as much good humour as she was mistress of, (for her countenance was not very pleasing) she asked me, how I liked Mr. Bennet? The question, you will believe, Madam, threw me into great confusion; which she plainly perceived, and without waiting for my answer told me, she was very well satisfied; for that it did not require her discernment to read my thoughts in my countenance.’ “Well, child,” said she, “I have suspected this a great while, and I believe it will please you to know, that I yesterday made the same discovery in your lover.” ‘This, I confess to you, was more than I could well bear, and I begged her to say no more to me at that time, on that subject.’—“Nay, child,” answered she, “I must tell you all, or I should not act a friendly part. Mr. Bennet, I am convinced, hath a passion for you; but it is a passion which I think you should not encourage. For, to be plain with you, I fear he is in love with your person only. Now this is a love, child, which cannot produce that rational happiness which a woman of sense ought to expect.”—“In short, she ran on with a great deal of stuff about rational happiness, and women of sense, and

and concluded, with assuring me, that, after the strictest scrutiny, she could not find that Mr. Bennet had an adequate opinion of my understanding; upon which she vouchsafed to make me many compliments, but mixed with several sarcasms concerning my learning.

I hope, madam, however, said she to Amelia, you have not so bad an opinion of my capacity, as to imagine me dull enough to be offended with Mr. Bennet's sentiments; for which I presently knew so well to account. I was, indeed, charmed with his ingenuity, who had discovered, perhaps, the only way of reconciling my aunt to those inclinations, which I now assured myself he had for me.

I was not long left to support my hopes by my sagacity. He soon found an opportunity of declaring his passion. He did this in so forcible, though gentle, a manner, with such a profusion of fervency and tenderness at once, that his love, like a torrent, bore every thing before it; and I am almost ashamed to own to you, how very soon he prevailed upon me to—to—in short, to be an honest woman, and to confess to him the plain truth.

When we were upon a good footing together, he gave me a long relation of what had past, at several interviews with my aunt, at which I had not been present. He said, he had discovered, that as she valued herself chiefly on her understanding, so she was extremely jealous of mine, and hated me on account of my learning. That as he had loved me passionately from his first seeing me, and had thought of nothing, from that time, but of throwing himself at my feet, he saw no way so open to propitiate my aunt as that which he had taken, by commending my beauty; a perfection to which she had long resigned all claim, at the expence of my understanding, in which he lamented my deficiency to a degree almost of ridicule. This he imputed chiefly to my learning; on this occasion he advanced a sentiment, which so pleased my aunt, that she thought proper to make it her own; for
I heard

‘ I heard it afterwards more than once from her own
‘ mouth. Learning, he said, had the same effect on
‘ the mind, that strong liquors have on the constitu-
‘ tion ; both tending to eradicate all our natural fire
‘ and energy. His flattery had made such a dupe of
‘ my aunt, that she assented, without the least sus-
‘ picion of his sincerity, to all he said ; so sure is
‘ vanity to weaken every fortrefs of the under-
‘ standing, and to betray us to every attack of the
‘ enemy.

‘ You will believe, madam, that I readily forgave
‘ him all he had said, not only from that motive
‘ which I have mentioned, but as I was assured he
‘ had spoke the reverse of his real sentiments. I was
‘ not, however, quite so well pleased with my aunt,
‘ who began to treat me as if I was really an idiot.
‘ Her contempt, I own, a little piqued me ; and I
‘ could not help often expressing my resentment,
‘ when we were alone together, to Mr. Bennet ; who
‘ never failed to gratify me, by making her conceit
‘ the subject of his wit ; a talent which he possessed
‘ in the most extraordinary degree.

‘ This proved of very fatal consequence : for one
‘ day, while we were enjoying my aunt in a very
‘ thick arbour in the garden, she stole upon us un-
‘ observed, and overheard our whole conversation.
‘ I wish, my dear, you understood Latin, that I might
‘ repeat you a sentence, in which the rage of a tigress,
‘ that hath lost her young, is described. No English
‘ poet, as I remember, hath come up to it ; nor am
‘ I myself equal to the undertaking. She burst in
‘ upon us, open-mouthed, and after discharging every
‘ abusive word almost, in the only language she un-
‘ derstood, on poor Mr. Bennet, turned us both out
‘ of doors ; declaring, she would send my rags after
‘ me, but would never more permit me to set my foot
‘ within her threshold.

‘ Consider, dear madam, to what a wretched con-
‘ dition we were now reduced. I had not yet receiv-
‘ ed the small legacy left me by my father ; nor was
‘ Mr. Bennet master of five pounds in the whole
‘ world.

‘ In this situation, the man I doated on to distraction had but little difficulty to persuade me to a proposal, which, indeed, I thought generous in him to make; as it seemed to proceed from that tenderness for my reputation, to which he ascribed it; indeed, it could proceed from no motive with which I should have been displeased.—In a word, within two days we were man and wife.

‘ Mr. Bennet now declared himself the happiest of men; and for my part, I sincerely declare, I envied no woman upon earth.—How little alas! did I then know, or suspect the price I was to pay for all my joys.—A match of real love is, indeed, truly paradise; and such perfect happiness seems to be the forbidden fruit to mortals, which we are to lament having tasted during the rest of our lives.

‘ The first uneasiness which attacked us after our marriage was on my aunt’s account. It was very disagreeable to live under the nose of so near a relation, who did not acknowledge us; but, on the contrary, was ever doing us all the ill turns in her power; and making a party against us in the parish, which is always easy enough to do amongst the vulgar, against persons who are their superiors in rank, and, at the same time, their inferiors in fortune. This made Mr. Bennet think of procuring an exchange, in which intention he was soon after confirmed by the arrival of the rector. It was the rector’s custom to spend three months every year at his living; for which purpose he reserved an apartment in his parsonage-house, which was full large enough for two such little families as then occupied it: we, at first, promised ourselves some little convenience from his boarding with us; and Mr. Bennet began to lay aside his thoughts of leaving his curacy, at least for some time. But these golden ideas presently vanished; for though we both used our utmost endeavours to please him, we soon found the impossibility of succeeding. He was, indeed, to give you his character in a word, the most peevish of mortals. This temper, notwithstanding that he was both a good and a pious man,

‘ made his company so insufferable, that nothing
‘ could compensate it. If his breakfast was not ready
‘ to a moment, if a dish of meat was too much or
‘ too little done ; in short, if any thing failed of ex-
‘ actly hitting his taste, he was sure to be out of hu-
‘ mour all that day ; so that, indeed, he was scarce
‘ ever in a good temper a whole day together : for
‘ fortune seems to take a delight in thwarting this
‘ kind of disposition, to which human life, with its
‘ many crosses and accidents, is in truth by no means
‘ fitted.

‘ Mr. Bennet was now, by my desire, as well as
‘ his own, determined to quit the parish ; but when
‘ he attempted to get an exchange, he found it a
‘ matter of more difficulty than he had apprehend-
‘ ed : for the rector’s temper was so well known
‘ among the neighbouring clergy, that none of them
‘ could be brought to think of spending three months
‘ in a year with him.

‘ After many fruitless enquiries, Mr. Bennet thought
‘ best to remove to London, the great mart of all
‘ affairs ecclesiastical and civil. This project greatly
‘ pleased him ; and he resolved, without more delay,
‘ to take his leave of the rector ; which he did in the
‘ most friendly manner possible, and preached his
‘ farewell sermon ; nor was there a dry eye in the
‘ church, except among the few whom my aunt, who
‘ remained still inexorable, had prevailed upon to hate
‘ us without any cause.

‘ To London we came, and took up our lodging
‘ the first night at the inn where the stage coach set
‘ us down ; the next morning my husband went out
‘ early on his business, and returned with the good
‘ news of having heard of a curacy, and of having
‘ equipped himself with a lodging in the neighbour-
‘ hood of a worthy peer, who, said he, was my fel-
‘ low collegiate ; and what is more, I have a direction
‘ to a person who will advance your legacy at a very
‘ reasonable rate.

‘ This last particular was extremely agreeable to
‘ me ; for our last guinea was now broached ; and the
‘ rector had lent my husband ten pounds to pay his
‘ debts

‘ debts in the country : for with all his peevishness
‘ he was a good and a generous man, and had indeed
‘ so many valuable qualities, that I lamented his tem-
‘ per, after I knew him thoroughly, as much on his
‘ account, as on my own.

‘ We now quitted the inn, and went to our lodg-
‘ ings, where my husband having placed me in safe-
‘ ty, as he said, he went about the business of the le-
‘ gacy, with good assurance of success.

‘ My husband returned elated with his success, the
‘ person to whom he applied having undertaken to
‘ advance the legacy, which he fulfilled as soon as the
‘ proper enquiries could be made, and proper instru-
‘ ments prepared for that purpose.

‘ This, however, took up so much time, that as
‘ our fund was so very low, we were reduced to some
‘ distress, and obliged to live extremely penurious ;
‘ nor would all do, without my taking a most dis-
‘ agreeable way of procuring money, by pawning one
‘ of my gowns.

‘ Mr. Bennet was now settled in a curacy in town,
‘ greatly to his satisfaction ; and our affairs seemed to
‘ have a prosperous aspect, when he came home to me
‘ one morning in much apparent disorder, looking as
‘ pale as death, and begged me by some means or
‘ other to get him a dram ; for that he was taken with
‘ a sudden faintness and lowness of spirits.

‘ Frighted as I was, I immediately ran down stairs,
‘ and procured some rum of the mistress of the house ;
‘ the first time, indeed, I ever knew him drink any.
‘ When he came to himself, he begged me not to be
‘ alarmed ; for it was no distemper, but something
‘ that had vexed him, which had caused his disorder,
‘ which he had now perfectly recovered.

‘ He then told me the whole affair. He had hi-
‘ therto deferred paying a visit to the lord whom I
‘ mentioned to have been formerly his fellow collegi-
‘ ate, and was now his neighbour, till he could put
‘ himself in decent rigging. He had now purchased
‘ a new cassock, hat and wig, and went to pay his
‘ respects to his old acquaintance, who had received
‘ from him many civilities and assistances in his learn-

‘ ing at the university, and had promised to return
‘ them fourfold hereafter.

‘ It was not without some difficulty that Mr. Bennet got into the antichamber. Here he waited, or, as the phrase is, cooled his heels for above an hour before he saw his lordship; nor had he seen him then, but by an accident: for my lord was going out, when he casually intercepted him in his passage to his chariot. He approached to salute him with some familiarity, though with some respect, depending on his former intimacy, when my lord stopping short, very gravely told him, he had not the pleasure of knowing him. How! my lord, said he, can you have so soon forgot your old acquaintance Tom Bennet? O Mr. Bennet, cries his lordship, with much reserve, is it you? you will pardon my memory. I am glad to see you, Mr. Bennet; but you must excuse me at present: for I am in very great haste. He then broke from him, and without more ceremony, or any further invitation, went directly into his chariot.

‘ This cold reception from a person for whom my husband had a real friendship, and from whom he had great reason to expect a very warm return of affection, so affected the poor man, that it caused all those symptoms which I have mentioned before.

‘ Though this incident produced no material consequence, I could not pass it over in silence, as of all the misfortunes which ever befel him, it affected my husband the most. I need not, however, to a woman of your delicacy, make any comments on a behaviour, which, though I believe it is very common, is nevertheless cruel and base beyond description; and is diametrically opposite to true honour, as well as to goodness.

‘ To relieve the uneasiness which my husband felt on account of his false friend, I prevailed with him to go every night, almost for a fortnight together, to the play; a diversion of which he was greatly fond, and from which he did not think his being a clergyman excluded him; indeed, it is very well if those austere persons who would be inclined to censure
‘ sure

‘ fure him on this head, have themselves no greater
‘ fins to answer for.

‘ From this time, during three months, we past our
‘ time very agreeably, a little too agreeably perhaps
‘ for our circumstances: for however innocent diver-
‘ sions may be in other respects, they must be owned
‘ to be expensive. When you consider then, madam,
‘ that our income from the curacy was less than forty
‘ pounds year, and that after payment of the debt to
‘ the rector, and another to my aunt, with the costs
‘ in law which she had occasioned by suing for it,
‘ my legacy was reduced to less than seventy pounds,
‘ you will not wonder that in diversions, cloaths, and
‘ the common expences of life, we had almost con-
‘ sumed our whole stock.

‘ The inconsiderate manner in which we had lived for
‘ some time, will, I doubt not, appear to you to want
‘ some excuse; but I have none to make for it. Two
‘ things, however, now happened which occasioned
‘ much serious reflection to Mr. Bennet; the one was,
‘ that I grew near my time; the other, that he now
‘ received a letter from Oxford, demanding the debt
‘ of forty pounds, which I mentioned to you before.
‘ The former of these, he made a pretence of obtain-
‘ ing a delay for the payment of the latter, promising
‘ in two months to pay off half the debt, by which
‘ means he obtained a forbearance during that time.

‘ I was now delivered of a son, a matter which
‘ should in reality have increased our concern; but
‘ on the contrary it gave us great pleasure; greater
‘ indeed could not have been conceived at the birth
‘ of an heir to the most plentiful estate. So entirely
‘ thoughtless were we, and so little forecast had we
‘ of those many evils and distresses to which we had
‘ rendered a human creature, and one so dear to us,
‘ liable. The day of a christening is in all families,
‘ I believe, a day of jubilee and rejoicing; and yet,
‘ if we consider the interest of that little wretch, who
‘ is the occasion, how very little reason would the
‘ most sanguine persons have for their joy.

‘ But though our eyes were too weak to look for-
‘ ward, for the sake of our child, we could not be

‘ blinded to those dangers that immediately threatened
 ‘ ourselves. Mr. Bennet, at the expiration of the two
 ‘ months, received a second letter from Oxford, in a
 ‘ very peremptory stile, and threatening a suit with-
 ‘ out any farther delay. This alarmed us in the
 ‘ strongest manner; and my husband, to secure his
 ‘ liberty, was advised for a while to shelter himself in
 ‘ the verge of the court.

‘ And now, madam, I am entering on that scene
 ‘ which directly leads to all my misery.’—Here
 she stopped, and wiped her eyes,—and then begging
 Amelia to excuse her for a few minutes, ran hastily
 out of the room, leaving Amelia by herself, while she
 refreshed her spirits with a cordial to enable her to re-
 late what follows in the next chapter.

C H A P. VI.

Farther continued.

MR S. Bennet returning into the room, made a
 short apology for her absence, and then pro-
 ceeded in these words:

‘ We now left our lodging, and took a second floor
 ‘ in that very house where you now are; to which we
 ‘ were recommended by the woman where we had
 ‘ before lodged: for the mistresses of both houses were
 ‘ acquainted; and, indeed, we had been all at the
 ‘ play together. To this new lodging then, (such
 ‘ was our wretched destiny) we immediately repair-
 ‘ ed, and were received by Mrs. Ellison (how can I
 ‘ bear the sound of that detested name!) with much
 ‘ civility; she took care, however, during the first
 ‘ fortnight of our residence, to wait upon us every
 ‘ Monday morning for her rent: such being, it seems,
 ‘ the custom of this place, which as it was inhabited
 ‘ chiefly by persons in debt, is not the region of cre-
 ‘ dit.

‘ My husband, by the singular goodness of the
 ‘ rector, who greatly compassionated his case, was
 ‘ enabled to continue in his curacy, though he could
 ‘ only do the duty on Sundays. He was, however,
 ‘ sometimes obliged to furnish a person to officiate at
 ‘ his

his expence ; so that our income was very scanty,
and the poor little remainder of the legacy being
almost spent, we were reduced to some difficulties,
and, what was worse, saw still a prospect of greater
before our eyes.

Under these circumstances, how agreeable to poor
Mr. Bennet must have been the behaviour of Mrs.
Ellison, who, when he carried her rent on the
usual day, told him, with a benevolent smile, that
he needed not to give himself the trouble of such
exact punctuality. She added, that, if it was at
any time inconvenient to him, he might pay her
when he pleased. To say the truth, says she, I
never was so much pleased with any lodgers in my
life. — I am convinced, Mr. Bennet, you are a very
worthy man, and you are a very happy one too ;
for you have the prettiest wife, and the prettiest child
I ever saw. — These, dear madam, were the words she
was pleased to make use of ; and I am sure she behaved
to me with such an appearance of friendship and af-
fection, that, as I could not perceive any possible
views of interest which she could have in her pro-
fessions, I easily believed them real.

There lodged in the same house—O Mrs. Booth !
the blood runs cold to my heart, and should run
cold to yours when I name him : — There lodged
in the same house a lord — The lord indeed whom I
have since seen in your company. This lord, Mrs.
Ellison told me, had taken a great fancy to my lit-
tle Charly : fool that I was, and blinded by my own
passion, which made me conceive that an infant, not
three months old, could be really the object of af-
fection to any besides a parent ; and more especially
to a gay young fellow ! but if I was silly in being
deceived, how wicked was the wretch who deceived
me ; who used such art, and employed such pains,
such incredible pains to deceive me ? he acted the
part of a nurse to my little infant ; he danced it, he
lulled it, he kissed it ; declared it was the very
picture of a nephew of his, his favourite sister's
child ; and said so many kind and fond things of
its beauty, that I myself, though, I believe, one of

* the tenderest and fondest of mothers, scarce carried
* my own ideas of my little darling's perfection, be-
* yond the compliments which he paid it.

* My lord, however, perhaps from modesty before
* my face, fell far short of what Mrs. Ellison reported
* from him. And now, when she found the impression
* which was made on me by these means, she took every
* opportunity of insinuating to me his lordship's many
* virtues, his great goodness to his sister's children in
* particular; nor did she fail to drop some hints,
* which gave me the most simple and groundless
* hopes of strange consequences from his fondness to
* my Charly.

* When by these means, which, simple as they may
* appear, were, perhaps, the most artful, my lord had
* gained something more, I think, than my esteem,
* he took the surest method to confirm himself in my
* affection. This was, by professing the highest friend-
* ship for my husband: for, as to myself, I do assure
* you, he never shewed me more than common re-
* spect; and I hope you will believe, I should have
* immediately startled and flown off if he had. Poor I
* accounted for all the friendship which he expressed
* for my husband, and all the fondness which he shew-
* ed to my boy, from the great prettiness of the one,
* and the great merit of the other; foolishly conceiv-
* ing, that others saw with my eyes, and felt with my
* heart. Little did I dream, that my own unfortunate
* person was the fountain of all this lord's goodness,
* and was the intended price of it.

* One evening, as I was drinking tea with Mrs.
* Ellison by my lord's fire, (a liberty which she never
* scrupled taking when he was gone out) my little
* Charly, now about half a year old, sitting in her
* lap; my lord, accidentally no doubt; indeed, I then
* thought it so, came in. I was confounded, and
* offered to go; but my lord declared, if he disturbed
* Mrs. Ellison's company, as he phrased it, he would
* himself leave the room. When I was thus prevail-
* ed on to keep my seat, my lord immediately took
* my little baby into his lap, and gave it some tea
* there, not a little at the expence of his embroidery;
* for

‘ for he was very richly drest : indeed, he was as fine
‘ a figure as, perhaps, ever was seen. His behaviour
‘ on this occasion gave me many ideas in his favour. I
‘ thought he discovered good sense, good-nature, con-
‘ descension, and other good qualities, by the fondness
‘ he shewed to my child, and the contempt he seemed
‘ to express for his finery, which so greatly became
‘ him : for I cannot deny, but that he was the hand-
‘ somest and genteelest person in the world ; though
‘ such considerations advanced him not a step in my
‘ favour.

‘ My husband now returned from church, (for this
‘ happened on a Sunday) and was, by my lord’s particu-
‘ lar desire, ushered into the room. My lord received
‘ him with the utmost politeness, and with many profes-
‘ sions of esteem ; which, he said, he had conceived
‘ from Mrs. Ellison’s representations of his merit.
‘ He then proceeded to mention the living, which
‘ was detained from my husband, of which Mrs. El-
‘ lison had likewise informed him ; and said, he
‘ thought it would be no difficult matter, to obtain a
‘ restoration of it by the authority of the bishop, who
‘ was his particular friend, and to whom he would
‘ take an immediate opportunity of mentioning it.
‘ This, at last, he determined to the very next day ;
‘ when he invited us both to dinner, where we were
‘ to be acquainted with his lordship’s success.

‘ My lord now insisted on my husband’s staying
‘ supper with him, without taking any notice of me ;
‘ but Mrs. Ellison declared, he should not part man
‘ and wife ; and that she herself would stay with me.
‘ The motion was too agreeable to me to be reject-
‘ ed ; and, except the little time I retired to put my
‘ child to bed, we spent together the most agreeable
‘ evening imaginable ; nor was it, I believe, easy to
‘ decide, whether Mr. Bennet or myself were most
‘ delighted with his lordship and Mrs. Ellison ; but
‘ this I assure you, the generosity of the one, and the
‘ extreme civility and kindness of the other, were the
‘ subjects of our conversation all the ensuing night,
‘ during which, we neither of us closed our eyes.

The next day at dinner, my lord acquainted us, that he had prevailed with the bishop to write to the clergyman in the country ; indeed, he told us, that he had engaged the bishop to be very warm in our interest, and had not the least doubt of success. This threw us both into a flow of spirits ; and in the afternoon, Mr. Bennet, at Mrs. Ellifon's request, which was seconded by his lordship, related the history of our lives, from our first acquaintance. My lord seemed much affected with some tender scenes, which, as no man could better feel, so none could better describe than my husband. When he had finished, my lord begged pardon for mentioning an occurrence which gave him such a particular concern, as it had disturbed that delicious state of happiness in which we had lived at our former lodging. " It would be ungenerous," said he, " to rejoice at an accident, which, though it brought me fortunately acquainted with two of the most agreeable people in the world, was yet at the expence of your mutual felicity. The circumstance I mean, is your debt at Oxford ; pray how doth that stand ? I am resolved it shall never disturb your happiness hereafter." At these words, the tears burst from my poor husband's eyes ; and in an ecstasy of gratitude, he cried out, " Your lordship overcomes me with generosity. If you go on in this manner, both my wife's gratitude and mine must be bankrupt." He then acquainted my lord with the exact state of the case, and received assurances from him, that the debt should never trouble him. My husband was again breaking out into the warmest expressions of gratitude ; but my lord stopt him short ; saying, if you have any obligation, it is to my little Charly here, from whose little innocent smiles I have received more than the value of this trifling debt in pleasure. I forgot to tell you, that when I offered to leave the room after dinner, upon my child's account, my lord would not suffer me ; but ordered the child to be brought to me. He now took it out of my arms, placed it upon his own knee, and fed it with some fruit from the dessert. In short, it would be more
tedious

‘ tedious to you than to myself, to relate the thousand
‘ little tenderneſſes he ſhewed to the child. He gave it
‘ many baubles; amongſt the reſt was a coral, worth at
‘ leaſt three pounds; and when my huſband was confined
‘ near a fortnight to his chamber with a cold, he
‘ viſited the child every day; (for to this infant’s ac-
‘ count were all the viſits placed) and ſeldom failed
‘ of accompanying his viſit with a preſent to the little
‘ thing.

‘ Here, Mrs. Booth, I cannot help mentioning a
‘ doubt which hath often ariſen in my mind, ſince I
‘ have been enough miſtreſs of myſelf to reflect on
‘ this horrid train, which was laid to blow up my in-
‘ nocence. Wicked and barbarous it was to the
‘ higheſt degree, without any queſtion; but my doubt
‘ is, whether the art or folly of it be the more con-
‘ ſpicuous: for however delicate and refined the art
‘ muſt be allowed to have been, the folly, I think,
‘ muſt, upon a fair examination, appear no leſs
‘ aſtoniſhing: for to lay all conſiderations of cruelty
‘ and crime out of the caſe, what a fooliſh bargain
‘ doth the man make for himſelf, who purchaſes ſo
‘ poor a pleaſure at ſo high a price!

‘ We had lived near three weeks with as much free-
‘ dom as if we had been all of the ſame family; when
‘ one afternoon, my lord propoſed to my huſband to
‘ ride down himſelf to ſolicit the ſurrender: for he
‘ ſaid the biſhop had received an unſatisfactory answer
‘ from the parſon, and had writ a ſecond letter more
‘ preſſing; which his lordſhip now promiſed us to
‘ ſtrengthen by one of his own that my huſband was to
‘ carry with him. Mr. Bennet agreed to this propoſal
‘ with great thankfulneſs; and the next day was ap-
‘ pointed for his journey. The diſtance was near
‘ ſeventy miles.

‘ My huſband ſet out on his journey; and he had
‘ ſcarce left me before Mrs. Eliſon came into my
‘ room, and endeavoured to comfort me in his ab-
‘ ſence; to ſay the truth, though he was to be from
‘ me but a few days, and the purpoſe of his going was
‘ to fix our happineſs on a ſound foundation for all our

P 6 future

‘ future days, I could scarce support my spirits under
‘ this first separation. But though I then thought Mrs.
‘ Ellison’s intentions to be most kind and friendly;
‘ yet the means she used were utterly ineffectual, and
‘ appeared to me injudicious. Instead of soothing my
‘ uneasiness, which is always the first physic to be
‘ given to grief, she rallied me upon it, and began to
‘ talk in a very unusual stile of gaiety, in which she
‘ treated conjugal love with much ridicule.

‘ I gave her to understand, that she displeased me
‘ by this discourse; but she soon found means to give
‘ such a turn to it, as made a merit of all she had said.
‘ And now, when she had worked me into a good hu-
‘ mour, she made a proposal to me, which I at first
‘ rejected; but at last fatally,—too fatally suffered
‘ myself to be over-persuaded. This was to go to a
‘ masquerade at Ranelagh, for which my lord had
‘ furnished her with tickets.

At these words, Amelia turned pale as death, and
hastily begged her friend to give her a glass of water,
some air, or any thing. Mrs. Bennet having thrown
open the window, and procured the water, which pre-
vented Amelia from fainting, looked at her with much
tenderness, and cried, ‘ I do not wonder, my dear ma-
‘ dam, that you are affected with my mentioning that
‘ fatal masquerade; since I firmly believe the same
‘ ruin was intended for you at the same place. The
‘ apprehension of which occasioned the letter I sent
‘ you this morning, and all the trial of your patience
‘ which I have made since.’

Amelia gave her a tender embrace, with many ex-
pressions of the warmest gratitude; assured her, she had
pretty well recovered her spirits, and begged her to
continue her story; which Mrs. Bennet then did.
However, as our readers may likewise be glad to re-
cover their spirits also, we shall here put an end to
this chapter.

C H A P. VII.

The story farther continued.

MRS. Bennet proceeded thus :

‘ I was at length prevailed on to accompany Mrs. Ellifon to the masquerade. Here, I must confess, the pleasantness of the place, the variety of the dresses, and the novelty of the thing gave me much delight, and raised my fancy to the highest pitch. As I was entirely void of all suspicion, my mind threw off all reserve, and pleasure only filled my thoughts. Innocence, it is true, possessed my heart ; but it was innocence unguarded, intoxicated with foolish desires, and liable to every temptation. During the first two hours, we had many trifling adventures not worth remembering. At length my lord joined us, and continued with me all the evening ; and we danced several dances together.

‘ I need not, I believe, tell you, madam, how engaging his conversation is. I wish I could with truth say, I was not pleased with it ; or, at least, that I had a right to be pleased with it. But I will disguise nothing from you : I now began to discover that he had some affection for me ; but he had already too firm a footing in my esteem, to make the discovery shocking. I will—I will own the truth ; I was delighted with perceiving a passion in him, which I was not unwilling to think he had had from the beginning, and to derive his having concealed it so long, from his awe of my virtue, and his respect to my understanding. I assure you, madam, at the same time, my intentions were, never to exceed the bounds of innocence. I was charmed with the delicacy of his passion ; and in the foolish, thoughtless turn of mind, in which I then was, I fancied I might give some very distant encouragement to such a passion in such a man, with the utmost safety ; that I might indulge my vanity and interest at once, without being guilty of the least injury.

‘ I know Mrs. Booth will condemn all these thoughts, and I condemn them no less myself ; for it is now

‘ my

‘ my stedfast opinion, that the woman who gives up
‘ the least outwork of her virtue, doth, in that very
‘ moment, betray the citadel.

‘ About two o’clock we returned home, and found
‘ a very handsome collation provided for us. I was
‘ asked to partake of it; and I did not, I could not
‘ refuse. I was not, however, entirely void of all
‘ suspicion, and I made many resolutions; one of
‘ which was, not to drink a drop more than my usual
‘ stint. This was, at the utmost, little more than half
‘ a pint of small punch.

‘ I adhered strictly to my quantity; but in the
‘ quality, I am convinced, I was deceived: for, be-
‘ fore I left the room, I found my head giddy. What
‘ the villain gave me, I know not; but besides being
‘ intoxicated, I perceived effects from it, which are
‘ not to be described.

‘ Here, madam, I must draw a curtain over the re-
‘ sidue of that fatal night. Let it suffice, that it in-
‘ volved me in the most dreadful ruin; a ruin, to
‘ which, I can truly say, I never consented; and of
‘ which I was scarce conscious, when the villainous
‘ man avowed it to my face in the morning.

‘ Thus I have deduced my story to the most horrid
‘ period; happy had I been, had this been the period
‘ of my life; but I was reserved for greater miseries:
‘ but before I enter on them, I will mention something
‘ very remarkable, with which I was now acquainted,
‘ and that will shew there was nothing of accident
‘ which had befallen me; but that all was the effect
‘ of a long, regular, premeditated design.

‘ You may remember, madam, I told you, that we
‘ were recommended to Mrs. Ellison by the woman
‘ at whose house we had before lodged. This woman,
‘ it seems, was one of my lord’s pimps, and had be-
‘ fore introduced me to his lordship’s notice.

‘ You are to know then, madam, that this villain,
‘ this lord, now confess to me, that he had first seen
‘ me in the gallery at the oratorio; whither I had gone
‘ with tickets, with which the woman where I first
‘ lodged, had presented me, and which were, it
‘ seems, purchased by my lord. Here I first met the
‘ vile

‘ vile betrayer, who was disguised in a rug-coat, and
‘ a patch upon his face.’

At these words, Amelia cried, O gracious Heavens!
and fell back in her chair. Mrs. Bennet, with proper applications, brought her back to life; and then Amelia acquainted her, that she herself had first seen the same person, in the same place, and in the same disguise. ‘ O! Mrs. Bennet,’ cried she, ‘ how am I
‘ indebted to you! what words, what thanks, what
‘ actions can demonstrate the gratitude of my sentiments! I look upon you, and always shall look upon you, as my preserver from the brink of a precipice; from which I was falling into the same ruin,
‘ which you have so generously, so kindly, and so
‘ nobly disclosed for my sake.’

Here the two ladies compared notes; and it appeared, that his lordship’s behaviour at the oratorio had been alike to both: that he had made use of the very same words, the very same actions to Amelia, which he had practised over before on poor unfortunate Mrs. Bennet. It may, perhaps, be thought strange, that neither of them could afterwards recollect him; but so it was. And, indeed, if we consider the force of disguise, the very short time that either of them was with him at this first interview, and the very little curiosity that must have been supposed in the minds of the ladies, together with the amusement in which they were then engaged, all wonder will, I apprehend, cease. Amelia, however, now declared, she remembered his voice and features perfectly well; and was thoroughly satisfied he was the same person. She then accounted for his not having visited in the afternoon, according to his promise, from her declared resolutions to Mrs. Ellison not to see him. She now burst forth into some very satirical invectives against that lady, and declared she had the art, as well as the wickedness of the devil himself.

Many congratulations now past from Mrs. Bennet to Amelia, which were returned with the most hearty acknowledgements from that lady. But, instead of filling our paper with these, we shall pursue Mrs. Bennet’s

net's story; which she resumed, as we shall find in the next chapter.

C H A P. VIII.

Further continuation.

‘**N**O sooner,’ said Mrs. Bennet, continuing her story, ‘was my lord departed, than Mrs. Ellison came to me. She behaved in such a manner, when she became acquainted with what had past, that though I was at first satisfied of her guilt, she began to stagger my opinion; and, at length, prevailed upon me entirely to acquit her. She raved like a madwoman against my lord, swore he should not stay a moment in her house, and that she would never speak to him more. In short, had she been the most innocent woman in the world, she could not have spoke, nor acted any otherwise; nor could she have vented more wrath and indignation against the betrayer.

‘That part of her denunciation of vengeance, which concerned my lord’s leaving the house, she vowed should be executed immediately; but then, seeming to recollect herself, she said, “Consider, my dear child, it is for your sake alone I speak; will not such a proceeding give some suspicion to your husband?” I answered, that I valued not that; that I was resolved to inform my husband of all, the moment I saw him; with many expressions of detestation of myself, and an indifference for life, and for every thing else.

‘Mrs. Ellison, however, found means to sooth me, and to satisfy me with my own innocence; a point, in which, I believe, we are all easily convinced. In short, I was persuaded to acquit both myself and her, to lay the whole guilt upon my lord, and to resolve to conceal it from my husband.

‘That whole day I confined myself to my chamber, and saw no person but Mrs. Ellison. I was, indeed, ashamed to look any one in the face. Happily for me, my lord went into the country without attempt-

ing

‘ ing to come near me ; for I believe his sight would
‘ have driven me to madness.

‘ The next day I told Mrs. Ellifon, that I was re-
‘ solved to leave her lodgings the moment my lord
‘ came to town ; not on her account : (for I really in-
‘ clined to think her innocent ;) but on my lord’s,
‘ whose face I was resolved, if possible, never more to
‘ behold. She told me, I had no reason to quit her
‘ house on that score : for that my lord himself had
‘ left her lodgings that morning in resentment, she
‘ believed, of the abuses which she had cast on him the
‘ day before.

‘ This confirmed me in the opinion of her inno-
‘ cence ; nor hath she from that day to this, till my
‘ acquaintance with you, madam, done any thing to
‘ forfeit my opinion. On the contrary, I owe her
‘ many good offices ; amongst the rest I have an an-
‘ nuity of one hundred and fifty pound a year from
‘ my lord, which I know was owing to her sollicita-
‘ tions : for she is not void of generosity or good-na-
‘ ture ; though, by what I have lately seen, I am con-
‘ vinced she was the cause of my ruin, and hath en-
‘ deavoured to lay the same snares for you.

‘ But to return to my melancholy story. My hus-
‘ band returned at the appointed time ; and I met
‘ him with an agitation of mind not to be described.
‘ Perhaps the fatigue which he had undergone in his
‘ journey, and his dissatisfaction at his ill success,
‘ prevented his taking notice of what I feared was too
‘ visible. All his hopes were entirely frustrated ; the
‘ clergyman had not received the bishop’s letter ; and
‘ as to my lord’s, he treated it with derision and con-
‘ tempt. Tired as he was, Mr. Bennet would not sit
‘ down till he had enquired for my lord, intending
‘ to go and pay his compliments. Poor man ! he lit-
‘ tle suspected that he had deceived him, as I have
‘ since known, concerning the bishop ; much less did
‘ he suspect any other injury. But the lord—the vil-
‘ lain was gone out of town, so that he was forced to
‘ postpone all his gratitude.

‘ Mr. Bennet returned to town late on the Saturday
‘ night, nevertheless he performed his duty at church

‘ the

‘ the next day ; but I refused to go with him. This,
‘ I think, was the first refusal I was guilty of since our
‘ marriage ; but I was become so miserable, that his pre-
‘ sence, which had been the source of all my happi-
‘ ness, was become my bane. I will not say I hated
‘ to see him ; but I can say I was ashamed, indeed,
‘ afraid to look him in the face. I was conscious of I
‘ knew not what——Guilt, I hope, it cannot be
‘ called.’

‘ I hope not, nay, I think not,’ cries Amelia.

‘ My husband,’ continued Mrs. Bennet, ‘ perceived
‘ my dissatisfaction, and imputed it to his ill success in
‘ the country. I was pleased with this self-delusion ;
‘ and yet, when I fairly compute the agonies I suf-
‘ fered at his endeavours to comfort me on that head,
‘ I paid most severely for it. O my dear Mrs. Booth,
‘ happy is the deceived party between true lovers, and
‘ wretched indeed is the author of the deceit.

‘ In this wretched condition I past a whole week,
‘ the most miserable, I think, of my whole life, en-
‘ deavouring to humour my husband’s delusion, and
‘ to conceal my own tortures ; but I had reason to fear
‘ I could not succeed long ; for on the Saturday night
‘ I perceived a visible alteration in his behaviour to
‘ me. He went to bed in an apparent ill humour,
‘ turned sullenly from me ; and if I offered at any en-
‘ dearments, he gave me only peevish answers.

‘ After a restless turbulent night, he rose early on
‘ Sunday morning and walked down stairs. I ex-
‘ pected his return to breakfast, but was soon informed
‘ by the maid that he was gone forth ; and that it was
‘ no more than seven o’clock. All this, you may be-
‘ lieve, madam, alarmed me. I saw plainly he had
‘ discovered the fatal secret, though by what means I
‘ could not divine. The state of my mind was very
‘ little short of madness. Sometimes I thought of
‘ running away from my injured husband, and some-
‘ times of putting an end to my life.

‘ In the midst of such perturbations, I spent the day.
‘ My husband returned in the evening.——O Hea-
‘ vens ! can I describe what followed ?——It is im-
‘ possible, I shall sink under the relation.——He

‘ entered

‘ entered the room, with a face as white as a sheet,
‘ his lips trembling, and his eyes red as coals of fire,
‘ and starting as it were from his head.’——“Molly,”
‘ cries he, throwing himself into his chair, “are you
‘ well?”——Good Heavens,’ says I, ‘ what’s the
‘ matter?——Indeed, I cannot say I am well. “No!”
‘ says he,—starting from his chair, “false monster,
‘ you have betrayed me, destroyed me, you have
‘ ruined your husband.” Then looking like a fury,
‘ he snatched off a large book from the table, and with
‘ the malice of a madman, threw it at my head, and
‘ knocked me down backwards. He then caught me
‘ up in his arms, and kissed me with most extra-
‘ vagant tenderness; then looking me stedfastly in the
‘ face for several moments, the tears gushed in a tor-
‘ rent from his eyes, and with his utmost violence he
‘ threw me again on the floor.—Kicked me, stamped
‘ upon me. I believe, indeed, his intent was to kill me,
‘ and I believe he thought he had accomplished it.

‘ I lay on the ground for some minutes, I believe,
‘ deprived of my senses. When I recovered myself, I
‘ found my husband lying by my side on his face, and
‘ the blood running from him. It seems when he
‘ thought he had dispatched me, he ran his head with
‘ all his force against a chest of drawers which stood in
‘ the room, and gave himself a dreadful wound in his
‘ head.

‘ I can truly say, I felt not the least resentment for
‘ the usage I had received; I thought I deserved it
‘ all; though, indeed, I little guessed what he had
‘ suffered from me. I now used the most earnest en-
‘ treaties to him to compose himself; and endea-
‘ voured with my feeble arms to raise him from the
‘ ground. At length, he broke from me, and spring-
‘ ing from the ground, flung himself into a chair,
‘ when looking wildly at me, he cried,—“Go from
‘ me Molly. I beseech you leave me, I would not
‘ kill you.”—He then discovered to me—O Mrs.
‘ Booth, can you not guess it?—I was indeed polluted
‘ by the villain—I had infected my husband—O Hea-
‘ vens! why do I live to relate any thing so horrid—
‘ I will

‘ I will not, I cannot yet survive it. I cannot forgive myself. Heaven cannot forgive me.’——

Here she became inarticulate with the violence of her grief, and fell presently into such agonies, that the frightened Amelia began to call aloud for some assistance. Upon this, a maid servant came up, who seeing her mistress in a violent convulsion fit, presently screamed out she was dead. Upon which, one of the other sex made his appearance; and who should this be but the honest serjeant? whose countenance soon made it evident, that though a soldier, and a brave one too, he was not the least concerned of all the company on this occasion.

The reader, if he hath been acquainted with scenes of this kind, very well knows that Mrs. Bennet, in the usual time, returned again to the possession of her voice; the first use of which she made, was to express her astonishment at the presence of the serjeant, and, with a frantic air, to enquire who he was.

The maid concluding that her mistress was not yet returned to her senses, answered, ‘ Why ’tis my master, madam. Heaven preserve your senses, madam. —Lord, sir, my mistress must be very bad not to know you.’

What Atkinson thought at this instant, I will not say; but certain it is, he looked not over wise. He attempted twice to take hold of Mrs. Bennet’s hand; but she withdrew it hastily, and presently after rising up from her chair, she declared herself pretty well again, and desired Atkinson and the maid to withdraw. Both of whom presently obeyed; the serjeant appearing by his countenance to want comfort almost as much as the lady did to whose assistance he had been summoned.

It is a good maxim to trust a person entirely or not at all: for a secret is often innocently blabbed out by those who know but half of it. Certain it is that the maid’s speech communicated a suspicion to the mind of Amelia, which the behaviour of the serjeant did not tend to remove; what that is, the sagacious readers may likewise probably suggest to themselves; if not, they

they must wait our time for disclosing it. We shall now resume the history of Mrs. Bennet, who, after many apologies, proceeded to the matters in the next chapter.

C H A P. IX.

The conclusion of Mrs. Bennet's history.

‘**W**HEN I became sensible,’ cries Mrs. Bennet, ‘of the injury I had done my husband, I threw myself at his feet, and embracing his knees, while I bathed them with my tears, I begged a patient hearing, declaring if he was not satisfied with what I should say, I would become a willing victim of his resentment. I said, and I said truly, that if I owed my death that instant to his hands, I should have no other terror, but of the fatal consequence which it might produce to himself.’

‘He seemed a little pacified, and bid me say whatever I pleased.’

‘I then gave him a faithful relation of all that had happened. He heard me with great attention, and, at the conclusion, cried, with a deep sigh—“O Molly, I believe it all.—You must have been betrayed as you tell me; you could not be guilty of such baseness, such cruelty, such ingratitude.”—He then—O it is impossible to describe his behaviour—he expressed such kindness, such tenderness, such concern, for the manner in which he had used me—I cannot dwell on this scene—I shall relapse.—You must excuse me.’

Amelia begged her to omit any thing which so affected her; and she proceeded thus:

‘My husband, who was more convinced than I was of Mrs. Ellison’s guilt, declared he would not sleep that night in her house. He then went out to see for a lodging; he gave me all the money he had, and left me to pay her bill, and put up the cloaths, telling me, if I had not money enough, I might leave the cloaths as a pledge: but he vowed he could not answer for himself, if he saw the face of Mrs. Ellison.’

‘Words

‘ Words cannot scarce express the behaviour of that
‘ artful woman, it was so kind and so generous. She
‘ said she did not blame my husband’s resentment,
‘ nor could she expect any other, but that he and all
‘ the world should censure her—That she hated her
‘ house almost as much as we did, and detested her
‘ cousin, if possible, more. In fine, she said, that I
‘ might leave my cloaths there that evening; but that
‘ she would send them to us the next morning. That
‘ she scorned the thought of detaining them; and as
‘ for the paultery debt, we might pay her whenever
‘ we pleased: for to do her justice with all her vices,
‘ she hath some good in her.’

‘ Some good in her, indeed!’ cried Amelia, with
great indignation.

‘ We were scarce settled in our new lodgings,’ continued Mrs. Bennet, ‘ when my husband began to
‘ complain of a pain in his inside. He told me he
‘ feared he had done himself some injury in his rage,
‘ and had burst something within him. As to the
‘ odious—I cannot bear the thought, the great skill of
‘ his surgeon soon entirely cured him; but his other
‘ complaint, instead of yielding to any application,
‘ grew still worse and worse, nor ever ended till it
‘ brought him to his grave.

‘ O Mrs. Booth, could I have been certain that I
‘ had occasioned this, however innocently I had occasioned it, I could never have survived it; but the
‘ surgeon who opened him after his death, assured
‘ me, that he died, of what they called a polypus in
‘ his heart, and that nothing which had happened
‘ on account of me, was in the least the occasion of
‘ it.

‘ I have, however, related the affair truly to you.
‘ The first complaint I ever heard of the kind, was
‘ within a day or two after we left Mrs. Ellison’s; and
‘ this complaint remained till his death, which might
‘ induce him perhaps to attribute his death to another
‘ cause; but the surgeon, who is a man of the highest
‘ eminence, hath always declared the contrary to me,
‘ with the most positive certainty; and this opinion
‘ hath been my only comfort.

‘ When

‘ When my husband died, which was about ten
‘ weeks after we quitted Mrs. Ellifon’s, of whom I
‘ had then a different opinion from what I have now, I
‘ was left in the most wretched condition imaginable.
‘ I believe, madam, she shewed you my letter. In-
‘ deed she did every thing for me at that time, which
‘ I could have expected from the best of friends. She
‘ supplied me with money from her own pocket, by
‘ which means I was preserved from a distress in which
‘ I must have otherwise inevitably have perished.

‘ Her kindness to me in this season of distress pre-
‘ vailed on me to return again to her house. Why, in-
‘ deed, should I have refused an offer so very con-
‘ venient for me to accept, and which seemed so ge-
‘ nerous in her to make ! here I lived a very retired
‘ life, with my little babe, seeing no company but
‘ Mrs. Ellifon herself, for a full quarter of a year.
‘ At last Mrs. Ellifon brought me a parchment from
‘ my lord, in which he had settled upon me, at her
‘ instance, as she told me, and as I believe it was,
‘ an annuity of one hundred and fifty pound a year.
‘ This was, I think, the very first time she had men-
‘ tioned his hateful name to me since my return to
‘ her house. And she now prevailed upon me, though,
‘ I assure you, not without much difficulty, to suffer
‘ him to execute the deed in my presence.

‘ I will not describe our interview,—I am not able
‘ to describe it, and I have often wondered how I
‘ found spirits to support it. This I will say for him,
‘ that, if he was not a real penitent, no man alive
‘ could act the part better.

‘ Beside resentment, I had another motive of my
‘ backwardness to agree to such a meeting ; and this
‘ was fear. I apprehended, and surely not without
‘ reason, that the annuity was rather meant as a bribe
‘ than a recompence, and that further designs were
‘ laid against my innocence : but in this I found my-
‘ self happily deceived ; for neither then, nor at any
‘ time since, have I ever had the least solicitation of that
‘ kind. Nor, indeed, have I seen the least occasion
‘ to think my lord had any such desires.

‘ Good

‘ Good Heavens ! what are these men ! what is this
‘ appetite, which must have novelty and resistance for
‘ its provocatives ; and which is delighted with us no
‘ longer than while we may be considered in the light
‘ of enemies.’

‘ I thank you, madam,’ cries Amelia, ‘ for relieving
‘ me from my fears on your account ; I trembled
‘ at the consequence of this second acquaintance with
‘ such a man, and in such a situation.’

‘ I assure you, madam, I was in no danger,’ returned Mrs. Bennet : ‘ For besides that I think I could
‘ have pretty well relied on my own resolution, I have
‘ heard since, at St. Edmundsbury, from an intimate
‘ acquaintance of my lord’s, who was an entire
‘ stranger to my affairs, that the highest degree of in-
‘ constancy is his character ; and that few of his num-
‘ berless mistresses have ever received a second visit
‘ from him.

‘ Well, madam,’ continued she, ‘ I think I have
‘ little more to trouble you with ; unless I should re-
‘ late to you, my long ill state of health ; from which
‘ I am lately, I thank Heaven, recovered : or, unless
‘ I should mention to you the most grievous accident
‘ that ever befel me, the loss of my poor dear Charly.’
—Here she made a full stop, and the tears ran down
into her bosom.

Amelia was silent a few minutes, while she gave
the lady time to vent her passion ; after which, she
began to pour forth a vast profusion of acknowledgements
for the trouble she had taken in relating her
history ; but chiefly, for the motive which had induced
her to it ; and for the kind warning which she had
given her by the little note which Mrs. Bennet had
sent her that morning.

‘ Yes, madam,’ cries Mrs. Bennet, ‘ I am con-
‘ vinced, by what I have lately seen, that you are the
‘ destined sacrifice to this wicked lord ; and that Mrs.
‘ Ellison, whom I no longer doubt to have been the
‘ instrument of my ruin, intended to betray you in the
‘ same manner. The day I met my lord in your
‘ apartment, I began to entertain some suspicions, and
‘ I took

‘ I took Mrs. Ellison very roundly to task upon them ;
‘ her behaviour, notwithstanding many asseverations
‘ to the contrary, convinced me I was right ; and I
‘ intended, more than once, to speak to you, but
‘ could not ; till last night the mention of the mas-
‘ querade determined me to delay it no longer. I
‘ therefore sent you that note this morning ; and am
‘ glad you so luckily discovered the writer, as it hath
‘ given me this opportunity of easing my mind ; and
‘ of honestly shewing you, how unworthy I am of your
‘ friendship, at the same time that I so earnestly de-
‘ sire it.’

C H A P. X.

Being the last chapter of the seventh book.

AMELIA did not fail to make proper compli-
ments to Mrs. Bennet, on the conclusion of her
speech in the last chapter. She told her, that from
the first moment of her acquaintance, she had the
strongest inclination to her friendship ; and that her
desires of that kind were much increased by hearing
her story. ‘ Indeed, madam,’ says she, ‘ you are
‘ much too severe a judge on yourself : for they must
‘ have very little candour, in my opinion, who look
‘ upon your case with any severe eye. To me, I as-
‘ sure you, you appear highly the object of compas-
‘ sion ; and I shall always esteem you, as an innocent
‘ and an unfortunate woman.’

Amelia would then have taken her leave ; but Mrs.
Bennet so strongly pressed her to stay to breakfast, that
at length she complied : indeed, she had fasted so
long, and her gentle spirits had been so agitated with
variety of passions, that nature very strongly seconded
Mrs. Bennet’s motion.

Whilst the maid was preparing the tea-equipage,
Amelia, with a little slyness in her countenance, asked
Mrs. Bennet, if Serjeant Atkinson did not lodge in
the same house with her. The other reddened so ex-
tremely at the question, repeated the serjeant’s name
with such hesitation, and behaved so awkwardly, that
Amelia wanted no further confirmation of her suspi-

cions. She would not, however, declare them abruptly to the other ; but began a dissertation on the serjeant's virtues : and after observing the great concern which he had manifested, when Mrs. Bennet was in her fit, concluded with saying, she believed the serjeant would make the best husband in the world : for that he had great tenderness of heart, and a gentleness of manners, not often to be found in any man ; and much seldomer in persons of his rank.

‘ And why not in his rank ? ’ said Mrs. Bennet. ‘ Indeed, Mrs. Booth, we rob the lower order of mankind of their due. I do not deny the force and power of education ; but when we consider how very injudicious is the education of the better sort in general, how little they are instructed in the practice of virtue, we shall not expect to find the heart much improved by it. And even as to the head, how very slightly do we commonly find it improved, by what is called a genteel education ! I have myself, I think, seen instances of as great goodness, and as great understanding too, among the lower sort of people, as among the higher. Let us compare your serjeant now, with the lord who hath been the subject of conversation ; on which side would an impartial judge decide the balance to incline ? ’

‘ How monstrous then, ’ cries Amelia, ‘ is the opinion of those, who consider our matching ourselves the least below us in degree, as a kind of contamination ! ’

‘ A most absurd and preposterous sentiment, ’ answered Mrs. Bennet warmly, ‘ how abhorrent from justice, from common sense, and from humanity—but how extremely incongruous with a religion, which professes to know no difference of degree ; but ranks all mankind on the footing of brethren ! Of all kinds of pride, there is none so unchristian as that of station ; in reality, there is none so contemptible. Contempt, indeed, may be said to be its own object : for my own part, I know none so despicable as those who despise others. ’

‘ I do assure you, ’ said Amelia, ‘ you speak my own sentiments. I give you my word, I should not
be

‘ be ashamed of being the wife of an honest man in
‘ any station.—Nor, if I had been much higher than I
‘ was, should I have thought myself degraded, by cal-
‘ ling our honest serjeant my husband.’

‘ Since you have made this declaration,’ cries Mrs. Bennet, ‘ I am sure you will not be offended at a se-
‘ cret I am going to mention to you.’——

‘ Indeed, my dear,’ answered Amelia smiling, ‘ I
‘ wonder rather you have concealed it so long; espe-
‘ cially after the many hints I have given you.’

‘ Nay, pardon me, madam,’ replied the other, ‘ I
‘ do not remember any such hints; and, perhaps, you
‘ do not even guess what I am going to say. My
‘ secret is this; that no woman ever had so sincere,
‘ so passionate a lover, as you have had in the ser-
‘ jeant.’

‘ I a lover in the serjeant! I!’ cries Amelia, a little surprised.

‘ Have patience,’ answered the other,—‘ I say,
‘ you, my dear. As much surprised as you appear, I
‘ tell you no more than the truth; and yet it is a truth
‘ you could hardly expect to hear from me, especially
‘ with so much good humour; since I will honestly
‘ confess to you—But what need have I to confess,
‘ what I know you guess already?—Tell me now sin-
‘ cerely, don’t you guess?’——

‘ I guess, indeed, and hope,’ said she, ‘ that he is
‘ your husband.’

‘ He is, indeed, my husband,’ cries the other, ‘ and
‘ I am most happy in your approbation. In honest
‘ truth, you ought to approve my choice; since you
‘ was every way the occasion of my making it. What
‘ you said of him, very greatly recommended him to
‘ my opinion; but he endeared himself to me most,
‘ by what he said of you. In short, I have disco-
‘ vered, that he hath always loved you, with such a
‘ faithful, honest, noble, generous passion; that I was
‘ consequently convinced his mind must possess all the
‘ ingredients of such a passion; and what are these,
‘ but true honour, goodness, modesty, bravery, ten-
‘ derness, and, in a word, every human virtue.—For-
‘ give

‘ give me, my dear ; but I was uneasy till I became myself the object of such a passion.’

‘ And do you really think,’ said Amelia smiling, ‘ that I shall forgive you robbing me of such a lover ? or, supposing what you banter me with, was true, do you really imagine you could change such a passion ?’

‘ No, my dear,’ answered the other, ‘ I only hope I have changed the object : for be assured, there is no greater vulgar error, than that it is impossible for a man who loves one woman, ever to love another. On the contrary, it is certain, that a man who can love one woman so well at a distance, will love another better that is nearer to him. Indeed, I have heard one of the best husbands in the world declare, in the presence of his wife, that he had always loved a princess with adoration. These passions, which reside only in very amorous and very delicate minds, feed only on the delicacies there growing ; and leave all the substantial food, and enough of the delicacy too for the wife.’

The tea being now ready, Mrs. Bennet, or, if you please, for the future, Mrs. Atkinson, proposed to call in her husband ; but Amelia objected. She said, she should be glad to see him any other time ; but was then in the utmost hurry, as she had been three hours absent from all she most loved. However, she had scarce drank a dish of tea before she changed her mind ; and saying, she would not part man and wife, desired Mr. Atkinson might appear.

The maid answered, that her master was not at home ; which words she had scarce spoken, when he knocked hastily at the door ; and immediately came running into the room, all pale and breathless ; and addressing himself to Amelia, cried out, ‘ I am sorry, my dear lady, to bring you ill news ; but Captain Booth’—‘ What ! what !’ cries Amelia, dropping the tea-cup from her hand, ‘ is any thing the matter with him !’—‘ Don’t be frightened, my dear lady,’ said the serjeant—‘ He is in very good health ; but a misfortune hath happened.’—‘ Are my children well ?’

‘well?’ said Amelia.—‘O, very well,’ answered the serjeant.—‘Pray, madam, don’t be frightened; I hope it will signify nothing—he is arrested—but I hope to get him out of their damned hands immediately,’ ‘Where is he,’ cries Amelia, ‘I will go to him this instant!’ ‘He begs you will not,’ answered the serjeant. ‘I have sent his lawyer to him, and am going back with Mrs. Ellifon this moment; but I beg your ladyship, for his sake, and for your own sake, not to go.’ ‘Mrs. Ellifon! what is Mrs. Ellifon to do?’ cries Amelia,—‘I must and will go.’ Mrs. Atkinson then interposed, and begged that she would not hurry her spirits; but compose herself, and go home to her children; whither she would attend her. She comforted her with the thoughts, that the captain was in no immediate danger, that she could go to him when she would; and desired her to let the serjeant return with Mrs. Ellifon; saying, she might be of service; and that there was much wisdom, and no kind of shame, in making use of bad people on certain occasions.

‘And who,’ cries Amelia, a little come to herself, ‘hath done this barbarous action?’

‘One I am ashamed to name,’ cries the serjeant; ‘indeed, I had always a very different opinion of him; I could not have believed any thing but my own ears and eyes; but Dr. Harrifon is the man who hath done the deed.’

‘Dr. Harrifon!’ cries Amelia.—‘Well then, there is an end of all goodness in the world. I will never have a good opinion of any human being more.’

The serjeant begged that he might not be detained from the captain; and that if Amelia pleased to go home, he would wait upon her. But she did not chuse to see Mrs. Ellifon at this time; and after a little consideration, she resolved to stay where she was; and Mrs. Atkinson agreed to go and fetch her children to her, it being not many doors distant.

The serjeant then departed; Amelia, in her confusion, never having once thought of wishing him joy on his marriage.

END OF THE TENTH VOLUME.

Do 41
1002h.





Fielding, Henry, 1707-1754

The works of Henry Fielding with the life of the author ; in twelve
volumes

Bd.: 10.

London (1766)

P.o.angl. 125-10

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10746455-6